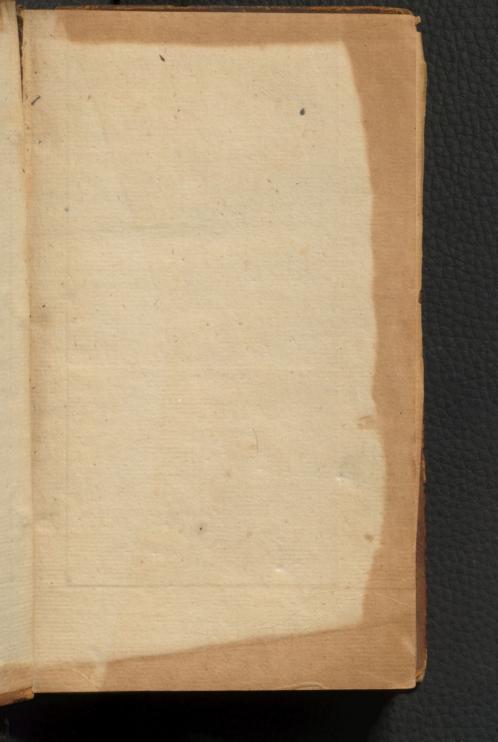
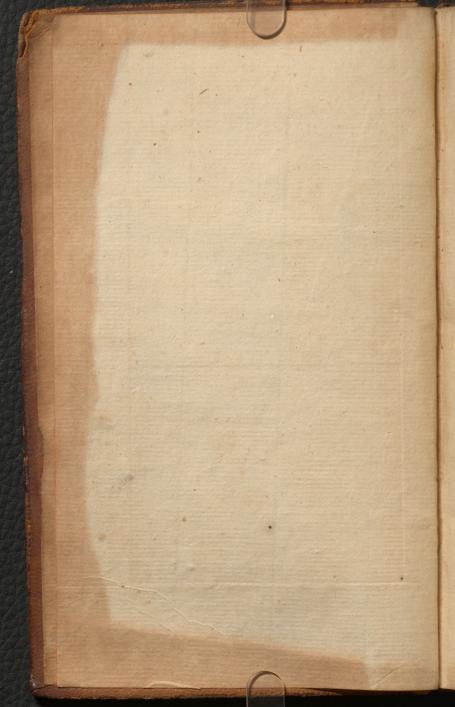
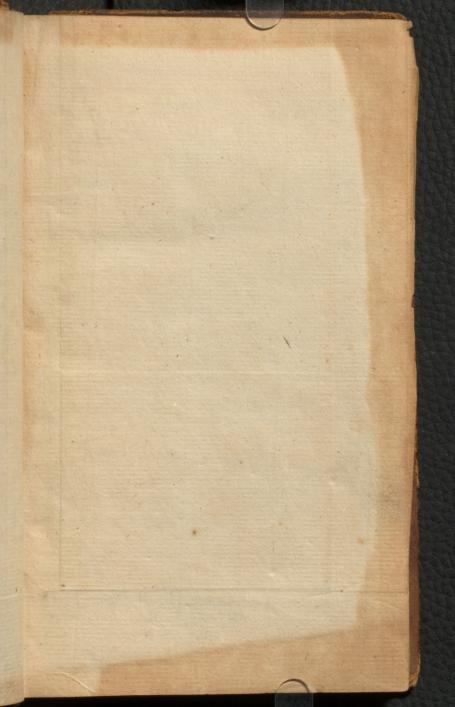
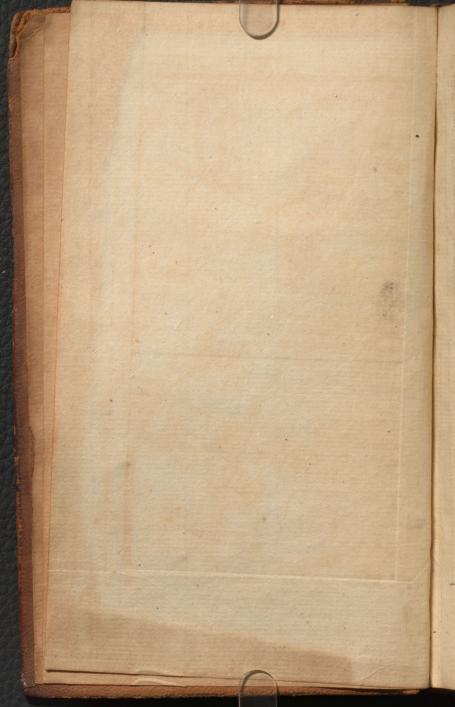


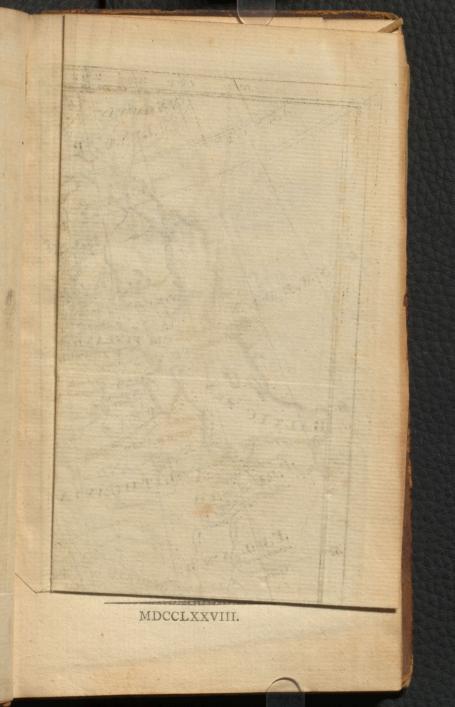
McGILL UNIVER-SITY LIBRARY













Constant To

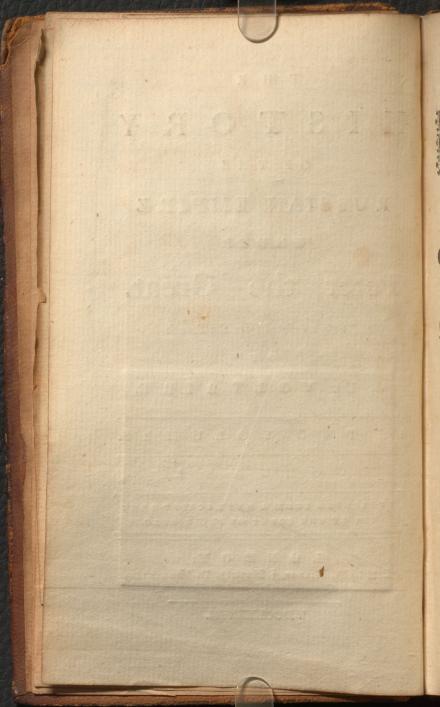
0

ТНЕ
HISTORY
OFTHE
RUSSIAN EMPIRE
UNDER
Peter the Great.
Newly translated from the French
OF
M. DE VOLTAIRE.
INTWO VOLUMES.
VOLUME I.
PUBLISHED FROM A MANUSCRIPT SENT HIM BY THE COURT OF PETERSBURG.
LONDON: Sold by A. MILLAR, J HODGES, D. MIDWINTER, M. COOPER, and J. and R. TONSON.
MDCCLXXVIII.



ТНЕ
HISTORY
OFTHE
RUSSIAN EMPIRE
UNDER
Peter the Great.
Newly translated from the French
OF
M. DE VOLTAIRE.
INTWO VOLUMES.
VOLUME I.
PUBLISHED FROM A MANUSCRIPT SENT HIM BY THE COURT OF PETERSBURG.
LONDON: Sold by A. Millar, J. Hodges, D. Midwinter, M. Cooper, and J. and R. Tonson.

MDCCLXXVIII.



THE

CONTENTS.

COME particular circumftances necessary to	the
1) understanding the life of Peter the Great,	i
The author's preface,	I
The introduction,	19

CHAP. I.

Description of Russia,	21
Of Livonia,	25
Of the government of Revel, Petersburg, and	d Wi-
burg,	26
Archangel,	28
Russian Lapland. Of the government of Archang	el, 29
Molcow,	32
Smolen fko,	36
Of the government of Novogorod and Kiow,	or the
Ukraine,	ib.
Of the government of Belgorod, Woronitz, and	Nisch-
gorody	39
	racan.

40

42

Astracan,

Orembourg,

Of the government of Cafan and of Great Parmia, ib. Of the government of Siberia, of the Samojedes, the Oftiacks, Kamtfbatka, &c. 45

CHAP. II.

Continuation of the description of Russia, populat	ion,
finances, armies, customs religion. State of 1	
fia before Peter the Great,	55
Of the title of Czar,	63
Religion,	64
Conclusion of the state of Russia before Peter	the
Great,	70

CHAP. III.

The ancestors of Peter the Great,	73
Alexis Michaelowitz, the fon of Michael,	77
Foedor, or Theodore Alexiowitz,	18

CHAP. IV.

John and Peter. Horrible fedition among the Strelitzes, 84

CHAP. V.

Administration of the princess Sophia. Extraordinary quarrel about religion. A conspiracy, 89 CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VI.

The reign of Peter the first. Beginning of the grand. reformation, 99

CHAP. VII.

Congress and treaty with the Chinese, 108

CHAP. VIII.

Expedition to the Palus Macotis. Conquest of Aloph. The Czar lends young gentlemen into foreign countries for improvement. 112

CHAP. IX.

Travels of Peter the Great,

0

45

uj.

63 64

70

73

71

rt. 81 ·

8)

P.

120

CHAP. X.

A conspiracy punished The Strelitzes abolished. Changes in customs, manners, state, and church, 135

CHAP. XI.

War with Sweden. The battle of Narva, 148

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XII.

Refources after the battle of Narva. That difafter entirely repaired. Peter gains a victory near the fame place. He executes great defigns in Russia. The person, who was afterwards empress, made prisoner at the facking of a city. Peter's successes. His triumph at Moscow, 156

CHAP. XIII.

Reformation at Moscow. New successes Founding of Petersburg. The Czar takes Narva, &c. 167.

CHAP. XIV.

Peter the Great keeps posselfession of all Ingria, whilf Charles XII triumphs elsewhere. Rise of Menzikoff. Petersburg secured. The Czar executes his designs, notwithstanding the victories of the king of Sweden. 177.

CHAP. XV.

While Peter is frengthening his conquests, and improving his dominions, his enemy Charles XII. gains several battles : gives laws to Poland and Saxony. Augustus, notwithstanding a victory gained by the Russians, receives laws from Charles XII. Augustus renounces the crown, and

CONTENTS.

and delivers up Patkul the Czar's ambaffador. Murder of Patkul, who is condemned to be broke upon the wheel.

CHAP. XVI.

A defign to fet up a third king in Poland. Charles XII fets out from Saxony with a flourisbing army, and passes through Poland like a conqueror. Gruelties exercised. Gonduct of the Czar. Successes of Charles XII. who at length advances towards Russia.

CHAP. XVII.

Charles XII croffes the Borifthenes, penetrates into the Ukraine, but does not concert his measures properly One of his armies is defeated by Peter the Great: he loses his supply of provisions and ammunition: advances forward through a desert country. His adventures on the Ukraine. 198

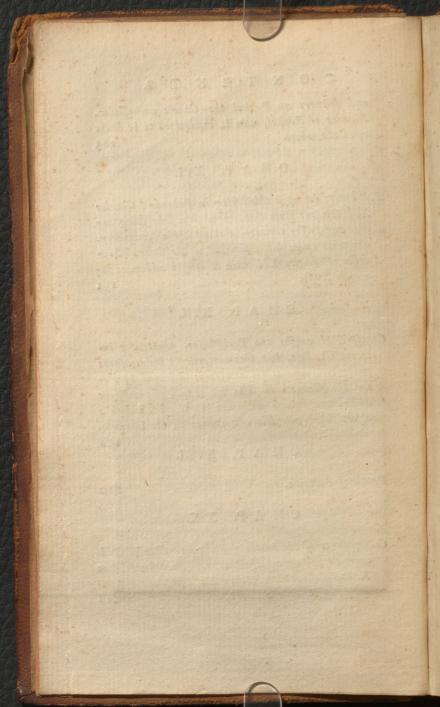
CHAP. XVIII.

Battle of Pultowa.

210

CHAP. XIX.

Confequences of the battle of Pultowa. Charles XII. takes refuge among the Turks. Auguflus, whom he had dethroned, recovers his dominions. Conquefls of Peter the Great. 218



Some particular CIRCUMSTANCES, neceffary to the understanding the LIFE of PETER the GREAT.

HE many ufeful and furprizing enterprizes undertaken and compleated by Peter I. none of which had ever entered 推祥 就就 into the imagination of any of his predeceffors, jufily intitled him to the furname of Great. Before his time, the knowledge of the Ruffians was wholly confined to those easy arts which are the confequence of mere necessity. So powerful is the influence of habit over the bulk of mankind, and fo little defirous are they of what they do not comprehend; the genius expounds itfelf with fo much difficulty, and is fo eafily difcouraged by the flighteft obflacles, that there is the greatest reason to believe that all nations continued, for many ages, in a state of the most profound ignorance, till, at last, fuch men as Peter the Great arole, at luch a period when it was most proper they should appear.

A YOUNG gentleman of Geneva, named Le Fort, happened accidentally to be at Mofcow, with the Danith ambaffador, about the year 1695. He had learned the Ruffian tongue in a very thort time, and fpoke almost all the European languages. Pe-Vol. I. Λ ter

CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

ii

ter the Great, who was then nineteen years of age, faw Le Fort, took a liking to him, employed him firft as a fervant, and afterwards admitted him into the moft intimate familiarity. From him he learned, that there was another way of living and reigning than that which had always been unhappily eftablished throughout his large empire; and, had it not been for this young gentleman, Ruffia had fill continued in its primitive flate of rudenefs and barbarifm.

FETER must have come into the world with a foul truly great, otherwife he never would have hearkened fo readily to the instructions of a stranger, nor been able to conquer all the prejudices of the prince and of the Ruffian. He foon observed he bad a nation and an empire to model anew; but he was poffeffed of no means equal to the accomplifhment of fuch a difficult and noble undertaking. From that time he came to a refolution of departing from his kingdom, and of going, like Prometheus, to borrow the celeftial fire to animate his compatriots. He went to fearch for this heavenly fpark among the Dutch, who, about three hundred years before, were as deflitute of it as the Ruffians themfelves. He could not, however, execute his fcheme fo foon as he could have defired. He was obliged to maintain a war against the Turks, or rather against the Tartars, in 1696; and he did not onic his realms till he had fubdued his enemies, to go and learn all the arts which were quite unknown in Ruffia. The mafter of the largest empire in the world lived almost two years at Amsterdam, and in the

the village of Saardam, under the name of Peter Michaeloff, though commonly called Mr Peter Bas. He ordered his name to be enrolled among the carpentirs of that famous village, which furnished fhips to almost all Europe. He handled the adze and the compais; and, after having worked in his fliop at fhip-building, he fludied geography, geometry, and hiltory. The croud at first flocked about him; but he foon checked their curiofity, by repelling his impertinent visiters with a good deal of harfhnefs and feverity, which, however, those people, fo remarkable for pride and refentment, bore very patiently. The Dutch was the first language he learned : he then applied bimfelf to the German, which appeared to him a very fmooth and harmonious tongue, and which he commanded to be fpoke at his own court.

HE acquired likewife a little of the English in his voyage to London; but he never understood the French, which hath fince become the language of Petersburg, under the Empress Elizabeth, in proportion as the nation has been civilized and polished.

HE was tall; his countenance was noble and majeftic, but fometimes disfigured by convultions, which even altered the features of his face. This detect in his organs was commonly attributed to the effects of poifon, which was thought to have been given him by his fifter Sophia. But the real poifon was the wine and brandy, in which, confiding too much in the firength of his conflitution, he frequently in ulged himfelf to excefs.

A z

HE

CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

iv

He converfed as freely with a common workman as with the general of an army. In this he acted not like a barbarian, who makes no diffinction between men of different ranks, nor like a popular prince, who wants to ingratiate himfelf with every body; he acted like a man who wanted to acquire knowledge. He loved women as much as his rival Charles XII. dreaded them; and, as in eating, fo in matters of gallantry, every thing was equally good. He valued himfelf much more on heing able to drink a great quantity, than on poffeffing a nice and exquifite tafte, capable of diftinguilting your excellent and delicious wines.

IT is commonly remarked, that kings and legiflators should not allow themselves to be hurried away by the violence of paffion : but no man was cver more paffionate, or lefs merciful, than the Czar Peter. This is one of those defects in the character of kings, which they are readier to confeis than reform: at last, however, he became fensible of his weaknefs, and, in his fecond journey to Holland, he faid to a magifirate of that country, " I have reformed my fubjects, but have not been able to reform myfelf." It must be confessed, however, that the barbarities with which he is reproached were as cuftomary at the court of Mofcow, as at that of Morocco. Nothing was more common, than to fee a Czar inflicting an hundred lafhes with a bull's pizzle upon the bare fhoulders of one of the firft officers of the crown, or of a maid of honour, for having neglected their duty through drunkennes: or trying the goodnels of his fabre by cutting off the

the head of a malefactor. Peter had performed fome of these Ruffian ceremonies. Le Fort, indeed, had gained fuch an afcendant over him, as to be able, fometimes. to ftop his hand when he was just upon the point of giving the blow ; but, unhappily, Le Fort was not always along with him.

His journey to Holland, and especially his tafte for the arts, which now began to difplay itfelf, foftened his manners a little ; for it is the natural tendency of all the arts to render men more tender and fociable. He often breakfasted with a geographer, who made fea-charts with him. He spent whole days with the celebrated Ruifch, who first invented the art of making those curious injections, which have carried anatomy to fuch great perfection, and have freed it from its former naufeoufnels. Peter gave himfelf, to the age of twenty-two, fuch an education as a Dutch mechanic would have given a fon in whom he perceived fome fparks of genius; and this education was far more than what any emperor of Ruffia before him had ever received. At the fame time, he fent the young Muscovites to travel and improve themfelves in all the European nations. But his first attempts of this nature was attended with little success. His new disciples did not imitate the example of their mafter ; there was even one of them that had been fent to Venice, who never came out of his chamber, that fo he might have no caule to reproach himfelf with having feen any other country than Ruffia. Their priefts infufed into them this ftrong averfion to foreign countries, who alledged that travelling was an unpardonable crime

A 3

CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

vi

crime in a Christian, for the fame reason that the Jews, in the Old Festament, had been forbid to affume the manners of their neighbours, more rich and more industrious than themselves.

HE left Amfterdam in 1698, and went to England, not in the character of a fhipwright, nor in that of a king, but under the name of a Ruffian gentleman who travelled for his infruction He faw and examined every thing. He even went to the English theatre, though he did not understand the language; but he found in the playhouse an actress, called Miss Grofts, from whom he received fome favours, without having the generofity to make her fortune.

KING William caufed a convenient houfe to be fitted up for his accommodation, which is a very great compliment in London. Palaces are not common in that large city; there you hardly fee any thing but low houfes, with paltry gates, like those of our shops, without court or garden. Indifferent as the house was, the Czar found it too genteel; and that he might have the better opportunity of improving himself in naval affairs, he took up his lodging in Wapping. He frequently put on a failor's habit, and made use of this difguise to engage numbers of them in his fervice.

HE formed the defign of drawing the Wolga and the Tanais into the fame channel, when he was at London. He even intended to join the Dwina to thefe two rivers by a canal; and thus to re-unite the Ocean and the Black and Cafpian Seas. The English whom he carried along with him ferved him

him but poorly in this extensive project; and the Turks, who took Aloph from him in 1712, oppofed the execution of fuch an immense undertaking.

HAPPENING to run fhort of money at London, the merchants of that city offered him a hundred thousand crowns, provided he would grant them a liberty of transporting tobacco into Ruffia. This was not only a great novelty in Muscovy, but was even inconfistent with the established religion. The Patriarch had excommunicated all that fmoked tobacco, because their enemies, the Turks, standed ? and the clergy confidered it as one of the greatest privileges of their order, to hinder the Ruffians from fmoking. The Czar, however, accepted the hundred thousand crowns; and undertook to introduce the practice of fmoking even among the clergy themselves. He likewise resolved to make feveral other alterations in the religious system.

IT is commonly a cuftom for fovereigns to make prefents to fuch noble travellers; and the prefent which King William made to the Czar was a genteel one, worthy of them both; he gave him a yacht of twenty five guns, a good failor, gilt like a Roman altar, and flored with provisions of every kind ; and the whole fhip's crew cheatfully confented that they flould be included in the prefent. Peter himfelf was the chief pilot in this yacht, and returned to Holland to revisit his carpenters. From thence, about the middle of the year 1698, he went to Vienna, where he had no need to flay folong as at London, becaufe at the court of the gave Leopold there was much more ceremony to be per-A 4 foimed.

VII

viii CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

formed, and far less instruction to be acquired. After having viewed Vienna, he intended to have gone to Venice, and from thence to Rome; but a rebellion, occasioned by his absence, and by the permifion of fmoking, obliged him immediately to teturn to Mofcow. The Strelitzes, the ancient troops of the Czars, fomewhat a kin to the Janiff .ries, as turbulent, as undifciplined, not fo courageous, and as barbarous, were infligated to revolt by fome monks and abbots, half Greeks and half Rufhans, who perfuaded them that God was highly provoked at the introduction of tobacco into Mulcovy; and thus threw the whole realm into a flame about this important quarrel. Peter, who was fully ap. prized of the great power of the monks and Stre-Titzes, had taken his meafures accordingly. He had a numerous body of forces, composed almost entirely of foreigners, well disciplined, well paid, and well armed, and who fmoked under the command of General Gordon, a man who underftood the art of war thoroughly, and no friend to the monks. This was the very point in which the Sultan Ofman had failed, when endeavouring, like Peter, to reform his Janiffaries, and having no power to oppose their obstinate disposition, he was fo far from being able to reform them, that he loft his life in attempting it.

PETER's armies were now put upon the fame footing with those of the other princes of Europe. He employed his English and Dutch carpenters in building thips at Veronitz, upon the Tanais, four hundred leagues from Moscow. He ornamented the

ix

the towns, provided for their fafety, made highways five hundred leagues in length, eftablished all forts of manufactures; and, what makes the profound ignorance in which the Buffians were at that time confpicuous, their principal manu'acture was that of pins. They now make flowered velvets, and gold and filver fluffs at Molcow. Such mighty things may be performed by one man, when he is an abfolute fovereign, and knows how to exert his authority !

THE war he carried on against Charles XII. to recover the provinces which the Swedes had formerly taken from the Ruffians, notwithstanding the bad fuccefs with which it was at first attended, did not prevent him from continuing his reformations both in church and flate; and accordingly, at the end of 1699, he ordered that the entuing year fhould begin in the month of January, and not in the month of September. The Ruffians, who thought that God had formed the world in September, were amazed to hear that their Czar had power to alter what God had eftablithed. This change began with the eighteenth century, and was uthered in by a grand jubilee, which the Czar appointed by his own authority; for having fuppreffed the dignity of the Patriarch, he exercifed all the functions. of that office himfelf. It is not true, as is commonly reported, that he put the Patriarch into the madhoufe of Molcow. Whenever he had a mind, at once to divert himfelf and inflict punishment, he uled to fay to the criminal, " I make you a fool ;" and the perfon to whom he gave this pretty appella-SON PROPERTY OF tion. AS

CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

X

tion, were he even the first nobleman of the kingdom, was forced to carry a bauble, jacket, and bells, and to divert the court. in quality of his Czarish majesty's fool. This task, however, he did not impose upon the Patriarch; he contented himself with fimply suppressing an employment which those who had enjoyed it had abused to such a degree, that they obliged the emperors to walk before them once a year, holding the bridle of the patriarchal horse; a ceremony which the Czar laid aside.

In order to have a greater number of fubjects, he refolved to have fewer monks; and accordingly commanded, that, for the future, no perfon under fifty years of age fhould be allowed to take the habit of that order; the confequence of which was, that in his time, of all the countries that contained monks, Ruffia contained the feweft; but after his death, this weed, which he had fo happily extirpated, fprung up afrefh; owing partly to that natural foible of all monks, the defire of enlarging their numbers, and partly to the ridiculous indulgence of fome governments, in permitting fuch a pernicious practice.

HE likewife made fome prudent regulations relating to the clergy, and tending to the reformation of their lives, although his own, in all confcience, was licentious enough : but he wifely judged, that many things are allowable in a king, that would be extremely indecent in a prieft. Before his time the women were always feparated from the men. In Rufha it was an unknown thing, that a hufband thould ever fee the lady he was to marry. The firft acquaint: nce

22

acquaintance he contracted with her was at church ; and one of the nuptial prefents was a large handful of twigs, which the bridegroom fent to the bride, as a kind of warning, that, on the first fault, the had reason to expect a little matrimonial correction. Husbands might even kill their wives with impunity; but such wives as usurped the fame right. over their hufbands were interred alive

7

ŀ

í.

•

1

1,

PETER laid afide the bundle of twigs; prohibited the hufbands from killing their wives; and, in order to match the two fexes with greater prudence and equality, and by that means to make the married flate more happy, he introduced the cuftom of making the men and women eat together, and of prefenting the fuitors to their miltreffes before the confummation of the nuptials. In thort, he profecuted his falutary fchemes fo rigoroufly and refolutely, that he at laft established the focial state throughout all his kingdom. No one is ignorant of the regulation he made for obliging his noblemen and their ladies to hold affemblies, where all tranfgreffions against the Ruffian politenels were punished, by obliging the guilty perfon to drink a large glafs of brandy, fo that the honourable company frequently went home very drunk, but little corrected. But it was a work of no fmall merit to introduce even a kind of imperfect fociety among a people who had hitherto lived in the most barbarous manner. He even ventured to exhibit plays The princefs Natalia, one of his fifters, wrote fome tragedies in the Ruffian language, not unlike those of Shakespeare, in which tyrants and harlequins form the

xii CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

the chief characters. The band of mufic was compofed of Ruffian fiddles, upon which they played with bulls' pizzles. They have now French comedies and Italian operas at Peterfburg; in every thing, grandeur and tafte hath fucceeded to barbarity. One of Peter's most difficult attempts was to shorten the coats of his subjects, and to make them shave their beards. This was the subject of great murmuring, and of feveral complaints. How was it poffible to teach a whole nation to make their cloaths after the German fashion, and to use the sazor? However difficult the undertaking was, it was at last accomplished, by placing at the gates of every town a fufficient number of tailors and barbers; the former clipped the coats, and the latter thaved the beards, of all those who entered; and fuch as refused to fubmit to thefe regulations were obliged to pay a fine equal to forty pence of our coin. But in a fhort time, the people chused much rather to part with their beards than their money. The women, who greatly preferred a fmooth to a rough chin, affisted Peter in this reformation : to him they were obliged for being exempted from the difcipline of the whip, for being indulged with the company of the men, and for having imoother and more decent faces to kifs.

While Peter amufed himfelf in making thefe reformations, and while he was bufied in a bloody war against the king of Sweden, he laid, in 1704, the foundations of the large city and harbour of Petersburg, in a morass where there was not before fo much as a fingle hut. He laboured with his own

own hands in building the first house; no difficulties were sufficient to leffen his ardour: work men were obliged to come from the frontiers of Aftracan, and from the coasts of the Black and Caspian Seas, to the coast of the Baltic. Above an hundred thousand men perished in the undertaking, partly by the fevere labour they were obliged to undergo, and partly by the want and hardships to which they were exposed; but, notwithstanding these obstructions, the city was at last raised. The harbours of Archangel, of Astracan, and of Veronick, were likewise erected.

Y

W

er

t

To defray the expences of executing fuch extenfive projects, of fupporting fleets in the Baltic Sea, and of maintaining an hundred thousand regular troops, the public revenue, at that time, was only about twenty millions of livres. I have feen an exact account of it, in the poffeffion of a gentleman who had been an ambaffador at Peterfburg But the wages of the workmen were proportioned to the wealth of the kingdom. It ought to be remembered, that the erection of the pyramids coft the fovereigns of Egypt nothing but onions. I repeat it again; we have only to exert our utmoft endeayours, we can never exert them enough.

AFTER Peter had created his nation, as it were, he thought he might take the liberty of gratifying his own humour, by efpouling his miltrefs, who very well deferved to have him for a hufband; and accordingly the marriage was publicly tolemnized, in the year 1712. This lady was the famous Catherine, originally an orphan, born in the village of Ringen,

xiii

xiv CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

Ringen, in Effhonia, brought up by a vicar out of mere charity, married to a Livonian foldier, and taken prisoner by a party of the enemy two days after her marriage. She was first a fervant in the family of General Bauer, and afterwards in that of Menzikoff, who, from a pattry-cook's boy, became a prince of the empire, and the first subject in the nation. At last the was married to Peter the Great, and, after his death, became Empress of Ruffia; a dignity to which her excellent virtues and abilities gave her a just claim. She prodigiously fostened the harshness of her husband's manners; and faved many more backs from the knout, and many more heads from the axe, than ever General Le Fort had been able to do. She was beloved and revered by the people. A German baron, a master of horse to an abbot of Fulda, would have difdained to have taken Catherine for a wife ; but Peter thought, that with him merit did not need to be fet off by a genealogy of thirty-two descents. Princes are apt to believe that there is no grandeur but what they confer ; and that with them every one are equal Certain it is, birth makes no more difference between one man and another, than between one als's father that carried dung, and another that carried relics. - Education makes a great difference, talents make a greater, and tortune the greatest of all Catherine had received, from her curate of Ellhonia, an education as good, at leaft, as any lady of Molcow, or of Archangel; and the was born with greater abilities, and with a more elevated foul. She had managed the tamily of General Bauer, and that of Prince

of.

af-

the

ame

eut,

133

ities

sion

by

are

hat

ge.

011*

ler.

183

100

du-

, 01

able

m1.

t of

ace

Prince Menzikoff, though the could neither read nor write. Whoever is capable to rule a large family, is likewife capable to rule a nation. This perhaps may feem to be a paradox; but undoubtedly it requires the fame economy, the fame wifdom and refolution, to command a hundred perfons, as to command thoufands.

PRINCE Alexis, fon to Peter, who, like him, had espoused a flave, and, like him, had privately quitted Muscovy, had not the fame fuccess in his two undertakings. He even loft his life in an illjudged attempt to copy the example of his father. This was one of the most flocking acts of feverity that ever fovereign exercifed: but what reflects great honour upon the memory of the Empiels Catherine, fhe had no hand in the untimely end of this prince, who was fprung from another bed, and who hated every thing that his father loved : Catherine was never accused of having acted the cruel ftep. mother. The great crime of the unhappy Alexis was, that he was too much a Ruffian, and that he difapproved of all the noble and illustrious things which his father had done for the glory and advantage of the nation. One day, as he heard fome Muscovites complain of the hard labour they were obliged to endure in building Petersburg, " lake comfort, (faid he) this city fhall not fland long." When he ought to have been attending his father, in those journeys of five or fix hundred leagues, which the Czar trequently undertook, he pretended to be fick : the phyficians purged him feverely for a dileafe with which he was not troubled ; and fo many

XT

xvi CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

many medicines, joined to large quantities of brandy, at once impaired his health and altered his temper. He discovered at first an inclination to learning; he understood geometry and history, and had learned the German language ; but he neither loved war, nor would he fludy the art of it; and this was the fault with which his father chiefly reproach ed him He had been married in 1711, to the Princefs of Wolfenbuttle, fifter to the Empress, the wife of Charles IV. This marriage proved very unhappy; the Princefs's company was often abandoned for debauch of brandy, and for the careffes of one Afrofina, a Finland girl, tall, handfome, and agreeable. Some people pretend that the Princefs died of forrow, if, indeed, it can ever be the occafion of death ; and that afterwards Alexis married Afrofina privately, in 1713, just at the time when the Empress Catherine was delivered of another fon, at which he was not very well pleafed.

The difguft between the father and fon became every day more inveterate, till at laft, in 1716, Peter threatened to difinherit the Prince, and the latter declared his intention of taking the monkish habit.

IN 717 the Czar refumed his travels, as well from political views, as from the motive of curiofity; and, accordingly, he now repaired to France. Had his fon been inclined to revolt, had he in reality fecured a party in his interest, this was the time to put his fcheme in execution; bur, instead of remaining in Ruffia, and gaining partitans, he went to travel like his father, after having, with great

great difficulty, collected a few thousand ducats, which he privately borrowed. He now threw himfelf into the arms of the Emperor Charles VI, the brother-in-law of his late spouse For some time he lived *incognito* at Vienna; from thence he went to Naples, where he continued very near a whole year, without either the Czar Peter, or any one in Ruffia, knowing where he was.

0.

-

ij

]•

WHILE the fon lay thus concealed, the father was at Paris, where he was treated with all the refpect and deference which he had met with in other nations, and with a politenefs which he could find no where but in France. It he went to fee a manufacture, and was charmed with any particular piece of work, he was fure to receive it the following day in a prefent He went to dine with the Duke d'Antin, at Petitbourg, where the first thing he faw was his own picture at full length, with the fame drefs which he wore. When he went to fee the royal collection of medals, the minters ftruck feveral medals of every kind before him, and prefented them to him with great politenefs; at laft they ftruck one, which they defignedly dropped at his feet, and left him to take it up; on this he faw himfelf very elegantly engraved, with thefe words, PETER THE GREAT; the reverse was a Fame, with this infeription, Vires acquirit eunde ; an allegory equally just and flattering to a prince who really encreafed his knowledge by his travels.

UPON beholding the tomb and flatue of ,Cardinal de Richlieu, worthy of the perfonage whom it reprefents, Peter difcovered one of those violent transports,

xvii

xviii CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

transports, and expressed one of those noble fentiments, which none but exalted minds are capable of feeling. He alcended the tomb, and embracing the flatue, in an extaly exclaimed, "Great flatefman, why was you not born in my time? I would have given you one half of my empire, to teach me to rule the other." A gentleman, possessed of less enthusias than Peter, upon hearing, these words explained, which were originally pronounced in the Ruffian language, remarked, "That if he had given him one half of it, he would not have been long able to preferve the other."

AFTER Peter had traversed France, where every thing disposes the mind to mildness ane elemenev, he returned to his own country, and there refumed all his former severity. Having prevailed upon his fon to leave Naples and repair to Petersburg, the young Prince was conducted from thence to Moscow, and brought into the presence of his father, who immediately deprived him of his right of fuccession, and made him sign a folemn deed of renunciation, about the latter end of January 1718, in confideration of which he promised not to put him to death.

IT was not however improbable, that fuch an act might one day be reverfed; in order, therefore, to firengthen it the more, the Czar forgetting his paternal character, and confidering himfelf only as the founder of a kingdom, which his fon perhaps might replunge into barbarity, caufed a procefs to be openly begun against this unhappy prince, touching fome refervations he was fupposed to have made made in the act of renunciation, which had been extorted from him.

enti.

pable

acing

vould

h me

vords

ed in

: had

been

eve=

101-

100

led

1

901

his

ght

18,

put

21

his

1 25

api

s to

de

An affembly of bifhops, abbots, and profeffors, was called ; thefe reverend judges found, that, in the Old Teftament, those who curled their father and mother were worthy of death : that, indeed, David had forgiven his fon Abfalom, who had revolted against him; but that God had never pardoned him. Such was their opinion, without coming to any final determination ; and yet it was the fame in fact as if they had figned a warrant for his execution. The Czarowitz had never curfed his father ; he had never revolted like Abfalom ; he had never lain publicly with the king's concubines; he had travelled indeed without the king's confent, and he had writ fome letters to his friends, in which he had only expressed his hopes that they would, one day, remember him in Ruffia ; but notwithflanding those favourable circumflances, of the hundred and twenty-four fecular judges who fat on his trial, there was not one but what voted for his death; and such of them as could not write caused their names to be figned by others. A report has been spread abroad in Europe, and it has been often committed to writing, that the Czar caufed to be translated, from the Spanish into the Russian language, the criminal process against Don Carlos, that unhappy prince and heir of an immenfe kingdom, whom his father Philip II. caft into prifon, where he wretchedly died : but the truth is, there never was any process commenced against Don Carlos; nor was the manner of his death, whether natural

xix

XX CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING

tural or violent, ever fully known. Befides, the Czar, of all the most despotic sovereigne, needed not any precedents. What is certain is, that the fon expired in his bed the day after the trial, and Peter had then at Molcow one of the best furnished apothecaries fhops in Europe. It is probable, however, that the death of the Czarowitz, the heir of the largeft kingdom in the world, and unanimoufly condenned by those who were now his father's fubjects, and who, had he lived, would have one day become his, might be owing to the terrible flock which a fentence fo fatal and unprecedented muft have given to his conflitution. The father paid a vilit to his fon when just upon the point of expiring, and is faid to have fhed fome tears. Infelix, utcumque ferent ea fata nepotes. But notwithftanding his tears, the wheels were covered with the broken limbs of his fon's friends. He even beheaded his own brother-in-law, the Count Lapuchin, whom he had repudiated, and uncle to Prince Alexis, whole conteffor likewife loft his head. If the Ruffians have been civilized, it muft be owned they have paid dearly for their politenefs.

The remaining part of the Czar's life was spent in the profecution of those great designs, and of those glorious schemes and projects that seemed to estace the memory of his cruelties, which, after all, perhaps, were absolutely necessary. He often made speeches to his court and council; in one of these he told them, that he had factifieed his ion to the fafety and welfare of his dominions.

AFTER

PETER THE GREAT.

the

not

fon

eter

200.

ever,

121-

COI]=

lub.

day

ock

d 2

Di.

1.

th

en

2.

to

10=

ent

to

AFTER the glorious peace which he at laft concluded with Sweden, in 1721, by which he obtained all Livonia, Eftonia, and Ingermania, and the half of Carelia, and Wibourg, the ftates of Ruffia gave him the name of Great, of Father of his country, and of Emperor. The flates were reprefented by the fenate, who folemnly conferred these titles upon him in presence of the Count de Kinski, minister of the Emperor, of Mr. de Campredon, envoy of France, and the ambaffadors of Pruffia and Holland. The princes of Europe have been gradually accustomed to give this title of Emperor to the Ruffian fovereign; but this dignity does not prevent the French ambaffadors from taking the right hand of those of Ruffia upon all occafions.

THE Ruffians ought without doubt to look upon the Czar as the greatest of men. From the coafts of the Baltic Sea to the frontiers of China, he is a hero : but ought he to be regarded in the fame light among us ? Is he comparable to our Condes, or our Villars, in valour, or to an infinite number of our cotemporaries in wildom, in genius, and in morals ? No; but he was a king, and a king but indifferently educated; and he performed what, perhaps, a thousand sovereigns in his fituation would never have done. He was poffeffed of that frength of mind which raifes a man above all forts of prejudice, as well with regard to the paft as the prefent. He was an architect who built with brick. and who, in any other nation, would have built with marble. Had he reigned in France, he would have

XXi

XXII CIRCUMSTANCES CONCERNING &c.

have carried the arts, from the condition in which they now are, to the higheft pitch of pertection. His having five and twenty large fhips on the Baltic Sea was an object of admiration: in our ports he would have had two hundred.

ONE may eafily judge what he would have done at Paris, when we form a view of what he has done at Peterfburg. What furprifes me the moft is, the little reafon there was to hope that fuch a man as Peter the Great fhould ever have arifen at Mofcow. It was as all the men who have ever inhabited Ruffia is to one, that a genius, fo different from the general character of their nation, would never be bestowed upon any Ruffian ; and it was fill farther, as fixteen million, the number of the Ruffians at prefent, is to one, that this genius would not fall to the lot of the Czar in particular. But, notwithstanding these improbabilities, the thing has actually happened. A prodigious number of favourable circumftances must have concurred ; an infinite feries of ages must have elapsed, before nature produced the man who invented the plough, or him to whom we are indebted for the art of weaving. The Ruffians, at prefent, are not furprifed at their rapid progress; in less than fifty years they have become fo familiarly acquainted. with all the arts, that one would imagine they had been in possession of them from remote antiquity. There are still large tracts of land in Africa that require the reforming hand of a Peter the Great : fuch a one may happen to come in fome millions of years; for all things come not fo foon as we would defire. THE

. D 2000 D × D 2000 0 0000 0 2000 0

he

oft

at

n.

2.

-

y

2

THE

PREFACE

SECT. I.

HO could have faid in the year 1700, W M that a magnificent and polite court would be effablished at the bottom of the gulph # of Finland ? that the inhabitants of Cafan, Solikam, and of the banks of the Wolga and Saik, would be in the rank of our best disciplined troops, and obtain victories in Germany, after having conquered the Swedes and Turks ? that an empire of two thousand leagues, almost unknown to us till then, would be polifhed in fifty years ? that its influence fhould extend to all the European courts; and that in year 1759, the most zealous protector of learning would be a Ruffian ? Any one who had dared to fay this would have paffed for the most chimerical man in the world. PETER the GREAT having alone formed the plan of this revolution, 2

Intion, is, perhaps, of all princes, he, whofe actions deferve most to be handed down to posterity.

THE court of Petersburg has favoured the author employed in this work with all the authentic documents. It is mentioned in the body of this biflory, that these memoirs are deposited in the public library at Geneva, a city much frequented, and in whose neighbourhood this historian refides; but fince his whole instructions, nor the intire journal of PETER the GREAT have yet been communicated to him, he has thought proper to keep these records at his own house, which are shewn to all the curious, with the same facility as they would have been by the keepers of the public library at Geneva; and the whole will be deposited there as soon as the second volume is finished.

THE public already have fome pretended hiftories of PETER the GREAT, moft of which have been composed from news papers. That which has been published at Amilerdam, in four volumes, under the name of the Boyard Nestefuranoy, is one of those too much frequented typographical frauds. Such are the memoirs of Spain, printed under the name of Don Juan de Colmenar, and the history of Lewis XIV. compiled by the Jesuit La Motte, from the pretended memoirs of a minister of state, and imputed to La Martiniere: fuch are the histories of prince Eugene, count Bonneval, and many others.

IT is thus the fine art of printing is made fubfervient to a commerce the most despicable. A Dutch bookfeller orders a book to be wrote, just as a manufacturer would order his fervants to work him

3

a piece of cloth; and unluckily there are writers whole neceffity obliges them to fell their labour to thele merchants, as journeymen for hire. Hence arife all thole infipid panegyrics and defamatory libels, with which the public are opprefied; which is one of the most shameful vices of our age.

NEVER did hiftory fland more in need of authentic proofs than at prefent, when they fo infolently traffic with falfhood. The author who now gives to the public the Hiftory of the Ruffian Empire under the reign of PETER the GREAT, is the fame perfon who thirty years ago wrote the hiftory of Charles XII from the memoirs of many people of public character, who had long lived near this monarch. The prefent hiftory is a confirmation of, and fupplement to the former.

WE think ourfelves here obliged, by a respect to the public, and to truth, to publish an undeniable testimony, which will shew what credit ought to be attributed to the history of Charles XII.

THE king of Poland, and duke of Lorrain, not long ago made that work be read over again to him at Commercy; he was to flruck with the truth of fo many actions which he had been witnefs of, and fo angry at the infolence with which they had been called in queftion, in fome libels and journals, that he was pleated to flrengthen, by the feal of his own deposition, the credit which the hiftorian deferves; but not being able to write himfelf, he made one of his principal officers draw up the following certificate. *

* My duty obliging me to caufe it to be printed, I have taken the liberty to fpare from the eyes of the reader fome too honourable terms, Vol. 1. B "We

4

" WE lieutenant-general of the king's armies, " grand-marefchal of the houfhold to his Polifh ma-" jefty, and commandant of Toul, of the two Bars, " Sec. certify, that his Polifh majefty, after having " heard the hiftory of Charles XII. read, wrote by " M. de V-(the last Geneva edition), not on-" ly praifed the flile-of that hiftory, and ad-" mired those flrokes ---- which characterife all " the compositions of that illustrious author; but " has alfo done us the honour to declare, that he " was ready to give a certificate to M. de V ____ in " order to atteft the truth of the facts contained in " this hiftory. This prince moreover adds, that "M. de V- has not forgot or milplaced any in-" terefling circumftance; and that every thing in " this hiftory is true, and in its proper order ; that the has treated of Poland, and all the events which " have happened there, &cc. as if he had been an " eye-witnefs. We further certify, that this prince " has ordered us to write immediately to M. de " V--- to inform him of what we have just heard; " and affure him of his majefty's elleem and friendss (hip.

" I HE great effeem we have for the reputation " of M. de V ---- and which every man of honour " ought to have for teffimonies which atteft the " truth of facts contained in contemporary hillories, " has engaged us to afk leave from the king of Po-" land to tend M. de V ---- a certificate in form, " of every thing which his majefty has done us the

of or it is evident that thefe are owing but to the indulgence and goodnefs of the prince, for which reafon I have reduced myfelf folely to the teftimony given in faveur of the truth.

66 honour

ies,

mae

te by

d ad-

ife all

; but

nat he

ed in

that

y in-

g in

that

1 311

, de

nd-

ion

our

the

ries, Po-

the

otho

011

" honour to mention. The king of Poland not " only confented to it, but even commanded us to " fend it, defiring M. de V—— to make ufe of it " as often as he thinks proper, either by commu-" nicating it, printing it, &c."

" Done at Commercy, this 11th day of July, " 1759.

" The Count de TRESSAN."

5

THIS act being fent to the author, furprized him fo much the more agreeably, as it came from a king, as well acquainted with all these events as Charles XII. himself; and who, besides, is so well known in Europe for his love for truth, and benevolence.

WE have alfo a multitude of authentic teffimonies concerning the hiftory of the age of Lewis XIV. a work no lefs true and important, wherein the author breathes the fpirit of patriotifm; yet his refpect for his country has no where inticed him to conceal the truth, nor ever prompted him to amplify the good, or difguife the evil; a work composed without interest, hope or fear, by a perfon whole fituation in life has placed him above flattering any body.

THERE are but few quotations in the age of Lewis XIV. becaufe the events in the beginning of that period are known to every body, and wanted only to be put in their proper light; and as for the later events, the author has been a witnefs of them himfelf. On the contrary, in the hitlory of the Ruffian empire, he always quotes his vouchers, the chief of whom is P_TER the GREAT himfelf.

B 2

SECT.

6

SECT. II.

WE have not given ourfelves the unneceffary trouble, in this Hiftory of PETER the GREAT, of vainly inquiring into the origin of the many nations, which compose the immense empire of Ruffia, from the Kamtshatka to the Baltic fea. It would be a firange undertaking to attempt to prove, by authentic pieces, that the Huns formerly came from the north of China into Siberia; and that the Chinese themfelves are a colony of Egyptians. I know that fome philosophers of great merit feem to think that there is a kind of conformity between these nations; but we have been too much deceived by their conjectures, which fome have even attempted to convert into certainty.

THUS, for example, they at prefent pretend to prove, that the Egyptians are the fathers of the Chinefe. An antient author has related, that Sefoltris the Egyptian went as far as the river Ganges ; now if he went fo far, he might go to China, which is at a great diffance from the Ganges; therefore he went thither; but China was not peopled at that time, it is therefore evident that Scioftris peopled it. The Egyptians in their feafls uled lighted candles, the Chinefe, lanthorns; therefore we cannot doubt that the Chinefe are an Egyptian colony. Moreover, the Chinefe have a large river, the Egyptians likewife have one. In thort, it is evident, that the first kings of China got their names from the antient kings of Egypt; for in the name of the family Tu we

7

we may find characters, which, ranged in another manner, form the word Menes It is then indifputable that the emperor Ju took his name from Menes king of Egypt, and the emperor Ki is evidently king Atoës, by changing k into a, and i into toës.

ions.

me

17

2.

BUT if a learned man of either Toboliki or Pekin was to read fome of our books, he might prove much more demonstratively, that the French descended from the Trojans. And thus he might prove it, and aftonish his countrymen by his profound refearches. The most antient and most respected books in that little country of the weft, called France, he might fay, are romances ; they were written in a pure language, derived from the antient Romans, who have never told a falfity. Now, more than twenty of thefe authentic books depofe, that Francus, the founder of the French monarchy, was the fon of Hector. The name of Hector has been preferved ever fince in that nation, and even in this prefent century, one of her greatest generals is called Hector de Villars.

THE. neighbouring nations have acknowledged this truth fo unanimoufly, that Ariofto, one of the most learned Italians, declares in his Orlando, that the knights of Charlemagne fought for Hector's helmet. In fhort, we have a proof which needs no reply; for the antient Franks, to perpetuate the memory of the Trojans, their fathers, built a new city of Froy in Champagne; and thefe new Trojans have always preferved fo great an averfion for the Greeks their enemies, that there is not at prefent 8

fent in that town four people who have learned Greek. They have never received the Jefuits among them, probably becaufe they have heard that fome of them formerly explained Homer in their fchools.

IT is certain that fuch arguments might make a great impreffion at Pekin and Toboliki ; but in the like manner another learned perfon might overturn the whole affair, by proving, that the Parifians defcended from the Greeks : For, he would fay, the first prefident of a court of judicature at Paris was called Achille du Harlai. Achille certainly is derived from the Greek Achilles, and Harlai comes from Aristos, by changing istos into lai. The Elyfian fields, which are still near one of the gates of the city, and mount Olympus, which is still to be feen near Meziére, are monuments which the most obflinate credulity cannot withfland. Befides, the A thenian cuftoms are preferved in Paris; they there judge of comedies and tragedies as fuperficially as they do at Athens; they crown generals of armies on the theatre, as in Athens; and, in fhort, Marshal Saxe publicly received a crown from the hands of an actrefs, which could not be given to him in the cathedral. The Parifians have academies, which are derived from those of Athens; as likewife churches, a liturgy, parifhes, and diocefes, all Greek inventions; and the words themfelves derived from the Greek; even the diffempers of these people have their names derived from the Greek, fuch as apoplexy, phthific, peripneumony, cachexy, diffentry, jealoufy, &c.

WE

8 2.

heir

1 52

62-

the

12

de.

mes

1.

be

the

23

ics

he

f*

11

WE must confess, that these fentiments will ftrengthen much the authority of the wife perfonage who has just demonstrated, that we were a colony of Trojans; these two opinions will be still combated by other profound antiquarians; fome will shew that we are Egyptians, feeing that the worship of Iss was established in the village of Iss, on the road betwixt Paris and Versailles; others will prove, that we are Arabs, as appears by the words almanac, alembic, algebra, admiral. The Chinese and Siberian literati would be very much perplexed to decide it, and would very likely leave us just what we are.

IT appears then, that the origin of all nations is involved in this uncertainty. It is the fame in regard to a whole people as with one particular family; many German barons pretend to be defcended, in a direct line, from Arminius; in like mannerthey have composed for Mahomet a genealogy, by which he fprang from Abraham and Hagar.

THUS the family of the ancient Czars of Ruffia was faid to come from Bela, king of Hungary; this Bela from Attila, Attila from Turck, father of the Huns; and this Turck was the fon of Japhet. His brother Ru/s founded the throne of Ruffia, and another brother, named Cameri, established his dominion towards the Wolga.

ALL these fons of Japhet were, as every one knows, the grandfons of Noah, whose three fons made what speed they could to establish themselves at a thousand leagues distance from each other, in order to prevent all fort of mutual affiliance, and

B 4

probably

probably begot by their fifters fome millions of inhabitants in a very few years

MANY grave writers have exactly traced these defcents with the same fagacity as when they difcovered how the Japanese had peopled Peru. History has been a long time written in this tafte, whichhas not been followed either by the President de Thou or Rapin-Thoyras.

SECT. III.

IF we muß be upon our guard with respect to the historians who ascend to the tower of Babel, and to the deluge, we ought not less to mistrust those who particularize every modern history, who enter into all the secrets of ministers, and who unhappily give you an exact account of every battle, which even the very generals themselves would find a very great difficulty to do.

THERE have been fought fince the beginning of the laft century near two hundred capital battles in Europe, the moft of them more fatal than the battles of Arabella and Pharfalia; yet as very few of thefe actions have had any great confequences, they are loft to pofterity. If there was but one book in the world, children would know by heart every line, and would be able to tell all the fyllables of it; in like manner, if there had been but one battle, the name of each foldier would be known, and his genealogy would pafs to the lateft pofterity: but in fuch a long, and almost uninterrupted fucceffion of bloody wars amongst Christian princes, the ancient interests

IO

11

of

interefts have all changed, and are effaced by new ones; battles fought twenty years ago are forgot by thole of the prefent time; juft as in Paris, the news of yefterday is fmothered by that of to-day, which in its turn will be loft in that of to-morrow; thus almost all events are precipitated one upon another into eternal oblivion. This is a reflexion which we cannot dwell too much upon; it ferves to confole us in the misfortunes which we are fubject to, and fhews us the vanity of human things. There remains nothing in hiftory worthy to fix the attention of men, but the firiking revolutions which have changed the manners and laws of great flates; and upon this account the hiftory of PETER the GREAT deferves to be known.

IF we have dwelt too long on the particulars of battles and fieges, which refemble other military operations of the fame nature, we alk pardon of the philofophic reader, and have no other excufe, except, that thefe fmall actions are connected with the great ones, and muft neceffarily be joined in the narration.

WE have refuted Norberg in fome palfages, which have appeared to us the most important; but have tuffered him to enjoy his miltakes with impunity in matters of less moment.

SECT. IV.

WE have made the hiftory of PETER the GREAT as concife and as copious as poffible. There are hiftories of little provinces, fmall cities, and even

B 5

inthele dif-Hifthich nt de

Ato

abel,

whe

up

tlei

iol

in

37.

of

sy

n

1

ė

of convents of monks, that take up many volumes in folio; the memoirs of a certain abbot, who retired into Spain, where he had fearcely done any thing worthy of notice, are comprized in feven volumes, while one is fufficient for the life of Alexander the Great.

THERE may be yet fome childifh men, who love the fables of Ofiris, Bacchus, Hercules, and Thefeus, confecrated by antiquity, better than the true hiftory of a modern prince; either becaufe the ancient names of Ofiris and Hercules flatter the ear more than that of Peter; or that the overthrowing of giants and lions pleafe a weak imagination more than laws and ufeful undertakings; and yet we muft contefs, that the defeat of the giant Epidaurum, and of Sinnis the robber, and Crommion's fow, are not equal with the exploits of Charles XII. the founder of Peterfburg, and the legiflator of a moft redoubtable empire.

It is true, the antients have taught us to think juffly, but it would be very ftrange to prefer Anacharfis, the Scythian, becaufe of his antiquity, to the modern Scythian, who has polifhed fo extenfive a country. We cannot fee why the legiflator of Ruffia ought to yield to Lycurgus and Solon. Are the laws of the latter, which recommend the love of boys to the citizens of Athens, and forbid it to the flaves; or those of the former, which command the girls to, box quite naked in public, preferable to the laws of him who civilized the people of hoth fexes in his dominions for fociety; who created

ated military difcipline by land and fea, and opened a pallage for all arts into his native country?

THIS hillory contains the transactions of his public life, which were ufeful ; not those of his private life, of which we have but few anecdotes, and those sufficiently known It would not become a ftranger to disclose the fecrets of his closet, his bed, or his table. If any one could have given fuch anecdotes, it would have been prince Menzikof, or general Sheremetow, who have been long intimately acquainted with him; but they have not done. this; therefore all that which is at prefent fupport+ ed but by public reports, is not worthy of credit. Men of fenfe would choose rather to fee a great man labouring twenty five years for the good of an extenfive empire, than be informed, in a very uncertain manner, of the foibles which this great man might have in common with the meaneft of his people.

SECT. V.

In what relates only to the file, criticifm, or eventhe reputation of an author, it is better to let the little tribe of pamphleteers indulge their malignity; for we fhould become almost as ridiculous as them, if we were to fpend time in answering them, or ceven in reading their productions: but when we difpute about important affairs, it is fometimes neceffary that truth thould defcend fo low as to confound the falthood of difdainful wretches; their fcandal ought no more to hinder her from clearing herfell, than the B. 6 bafenefs

e any n vo-Alex-Thee true be anbe en pwing more

mut

, 200

e not

oubt.

r Å.

ten.

the

10.

Ife*

ple

12"

*91 0

13.

bafenefs of a criminal, among the dregs of the people, fhould hinder the courfe of juffice from acting against him. It is by this double reason then, that we have been obliged to filence that ignorant rafcal, who has corrupted the history of Lewis XIV by notes, as abfurd as fcandalous, in which he brutally infults a branch of the house of France, all the house of Austria, and a hundred other illustrious families in Europe, whose very anti-chambers are as much unknown to him, as the facts which he has prefumed to fallify.

THIS facility of punifhing calumnies, is miffortunately, one of the greatest inconveniencies attached to the art of printing.

LE Vaffor, a prieft of the oratory, and La Motte, a Jefuit; the one a beggar in England, the other in Holland, both wrote hiftory for their livelihood. The one choic Lewis XIII. king of France, for the object of his fatire, and the other Lewis XIV. Their change of religion was not adapted to recommend them to the public as men of veracity; neverthelefs, it is droll to fee with what confidence they declare that they are intrufted with the depositum of truth, continually repeating this maxim, "That " an hiftorian thould boldly tell the whole truth." But they ought to have added, that he fhould begin by being informed of it himfelf.

THEIR own maxim condemns them; but even this maxim deferves to be examined, fince it becomes an excute for all fatiris.

ALL truths of importance or public utility ought,

the

iom

afon

that

y of

, m

VELY

1, 8

mil.

s at-

虚

end

he.

hey

m

hat

1

18+

e.

ought, doubtles, to be told; but if there should be any odious anecdote, relating to a prince; if within his own domeftic inclosure he has been guilty, like many private people, of fome human frailties, known perhaps to one or two confidents; who is it that commands you to reveal to the public what these two confidents are intrusted with? I will grant that you have penetrated into this mystery : but why thould you tear the veil with which every man has a right to cover the receffes of his own house? And for what reason do you publish this feandal ? Fo flatter the curiofity of men, you will answer, to please their malignity, and to fell my book, which, without that, would not be read. You are then only a defamer, a libeller, a feller of detraction, and not an historian.

It this weakness of a man, in public life; if this fecret vice, which you feek to publish, has any influence over the public affairs; if it has caufed the loss of a battle, difordered the finances of the state, or made the citizens unhappy, you ought to speak of it. It is your duty to discover the minute cause of such great events; otherwise you ought to be filent.

" LET no truth be concealed," is a maxim which may allow many exceptions; but here is one, which will admit of none, " Fell nothing to " polterity but what is worthy of polterity."

SECT. VI.

BESIDES fallhoods in facts, there is also a falfhood

IS

hood in characters The madnefs of loading hiftory with thefe portraits began in France with the writing of romances. It was Clelia who first introduced this fashion. Sarrazin, just upon the dawn of good tass, wrote the history of the conspiracy of Walstein, who had never been concerned in any plot; he fails not, in drawing the character of that general, whom he had never feen, to translate almost all that Sallust has faid of Cataline, whom that Roman historian had often feen. This is writing history in an ingenious manner; but he who takes fo much pains to shew his wit, does no more than thew it; which is no great matter.

CARDINAL de Retz might, with propriety, give the characters of the principal perfonages of his time, as he had been intimately acquainted with. them, who had been either his friends or his enemies. He has not painted them, it is true, in those glaring colours with which Maimbourg has embellished the romantic histories of princes in past. But was he a faithful painter ? Did not ages. paffion, and the love of fingularity, fometimes guide his pencil ? Ought he, for example, thus to have expressed himself in respect to the queen, mother of Lewis XIV ? " She had as much wit as was " fufficient for her to appear foolifh to the eyes of " those who did not know her : She had more 66 fourness than pride, more pride than grandeur, 66 more outward flow than reality, more regard to " money than liberality, more liberality than felf-" ichnefs, more felfichnefs than difintereitednefs, ss more attachment than paffion, more intentibility ss than

than cruelty, more fuperfition than real piety,
more flubbornefs than iteadinefs, and more incapacity than of all the reft "

the

t in.

awn

any E that

te al.

that

Who

S DO

1

girt

of his with

ene.

ba

nu

to

ty

n

WE must confels, that the obscurity of these expressions, the multitude of antithese and comparatives, and this burlesque way of painting, so unworthy of history, can never please those of a good understanding. Those who love truth, doubt much of the exactness of the character, in comparing it with the queen's; and virtuous minds are also shocked with the ill-nature and discain which the historian displays in speaking of a princes, who had loaded him with so many favours, and are very angry to see an archbishop engaged in a civil war, merely, as he himself fays, for the pleasure it gave him.

Is we are to diffrust characters, drawn even by those who are so well qualified for that task, how can we believe an bistorian who affects to penetrate into the secrets of a prince, who, perhaps, lived at the distance of six hundred leagues from him? He should in this case describe him by his actions, and leave to those who have been a long time near his perfon to tell the rest.

HARANGUES are another kind of oratorical lying, in which hiftorians formerly indulged themfelves. They made their heroes fay what was poffible for them to have faid. This liberty indeed might have been taken with a perfon of fome antiquity, but at present their fictions are no longer tolerated; nay; we go itill farther, for if any barangue were to be put into the mouth of a prince who never

never pronounced it, the historian would be confidered as a rhetorician

A THIRD kind of lying, and indeed the most rude, but which has been a long time the most feducing, is that of the marvelous ; it bears fway in all antient hiftories, not one excepted.

WE still meet with fome predictions in the hiftory of Charles XII of Norberg : but we find none in any of the judicious hiftorians who have wrote in this century; omens, prodigies and apparitions, are banifhed into the regions of fable. For hiftory flood in no need to be enlightened by philosophy.



THE

:0T-

molt t fe-

bif.

te in ions, ftory pay. stein mit inter bans is T He Burg siller grafti sout,

INTRODUCTION.

※ 要来T the beginning of the present century, A A the vulgar knew no other hero in the He north but Charles XII. His perfonal Xi IX valcur, which was much more like that of a private foldier than that of a king, the noife of his victories, and likewife of his misfortunes, made an impression on those who are easily ftruck with great events, but are not fo clear fighted in regard to more flow and useful labours. PETER the FIRST would be able to go through with his great undertakings; yet they have not only fubfifted, but have been improved, especially under his daughter the empress Elizabeth. This empire is at prefent reckoned amongst the most flourishing flates, and PETER is in the rank of the greatest legislators : although his undertakings had no need of fuccels from the approbation of the learned, yet his fuccels has ftrengthened his glory for ever. At prefent we judge that Charles XII. deferved to have the first post under PETER the GREAT; the one has left nothing, but ruins, and the other 18

20 INTRODUCTION.

is a founder of an empire in every refpect. Such was the judgment I ventured to pass thirty years ago, when I wrote the history of Charles XII. The memoirs with which I have been furnished concerning Ruffia puts me in a condition to make known this empire, whose people are fo antient, while their laws, manners, and arts, are of a new creation.

waying tabler of this mining of the



THE

Such

yean

XII

maie tient,

1 DET

HISTORY

THE

OFTHE

RUSSIAN EMPIRE

UNDER

PETERTHE GREAT.

CHAP. I.

Description of RUSSIA.

R in the univerfe; it extends from eaft R to weft for more than two thouland Heagues, and from north to fouth more than eight hundred. It borders Poland and the Frozen fea, and joins Sweden and China. Its length from the ifle of Dago, in the weft of Livonia, to its eaftermost bounds, contains near one hundred and feventy degrees; fo that when it is mid-day in the weft of this empire, it is

THE HISTORY

is very near midnight in the eaft. Its breadth from fouth to north is three thousand fix hundred werfts, which is eight hundred and fixty of our common leagues.

So little were we acquainted with the bounds of this country in the paft century, that when we heard in the year 1689, that the Chinese and Ruffians were at war, and that the emperor *Gam-hi* on the one fide, and the Czars Ivan and Peter on the other, had sent their respective ambassiadors to meet within three hundred leagues of Pekin, upon the boundaries of the two empires, to terminate their difference, we at first treated this event as fabulous.

THE country which is at prefent comprised under the name of Ruffia, or the Ruffias, is larger than all the reft of Europe, or than ever the Roman empire was, or that of Darius, conquered by Alexander; for it contains more than one million one hundred fquare leagues. The Roman empire, and that of Alexander, contained each about five hundred and filty thousand, and there is not a kingdom in Europe the twelfth part fo extensive as the Roman empire; but it would require whole ages, even under a race of fuch auspicious monarchs as Peter the Great, to make it as populous, plentiful, and well inhabited as our fouthern countries.

THE English ambassador who refided at Peterfburg in 1732, and who had been at Madrid, says, in his manufcript relation, that in Spain, which is the least populous state in Europe, there may be reckoned forty persons to every square mile, and in Russia

from

erft

n nt

Rul-

n the

meet

t the

10.

em.

ere

1

1e

8

Ruffia not above five. We thall fee, in the fecond chapter, whether this minister was miftaken. Marshal Vauban, the greatest of engineers and the best of citizens, is of opinion, that in France, every square mile contains two hundred inhabitants. These calculations are never very exact, but they ferve to show the surprising disproportion in the populousness of two different countries.

I SHALL observe here, that from Petersburg to Pekin, there is hardly one mountain to be met with in the route which the caravans might take through independant Tartary, and that from Petersburg to the north of France, by the road of Dantzick, Hamburg, and Amsterdam, there is not even a hill of any eminence to be feen. This observation leaves room to doubt of the truth of that fystem, which makes the mountains to have been formed by the rolling of the waves of the fea, and fuppofes all that is at present dry land, to have been for a long time covered with water : but how comes it to pafs, that the waves, which, according to this supposition, formed the Alps, the Pyrenees and Mount Taurus, did not likewife form fome eminence or hill from Normandy to China, which is a winding space of above three thousand leagues ? Geography, thus confidered, may furnish lights to natural philosophy, or at least give room for rational doubts.

FORMERLY we called Ruffia by the name of Mufcovy, from the city of Mofcow, the capital of that empire, and the refidence of the grand dukes: but at prefent the ancient name of Ruffin prevails. It is not my businefs in this place to enquire, why

THE HISTORY

why the countries from Smolensko, to the other fide of Moscow, were called White Russia, or why Hubner gives it the name of Black, or for what reason the government of *Kiow* should be named Red Russia.

IT is probable that Madies the Scythian, who made an irruption into Afia, near feven centuries. before our vulgar æra, might have carried his arms into these regions, as Genzis-Khan, and Tamerlane have done fince, and as probably others had done long before Madies. Every part of antiquity is not deferving of our enquiries; that of the Chinefe, the Indians, the Perfians, and the Egyptians, are afcertained by illustrious and interefting monuments: but thefe monuments fuppofe others of a more ancient date, fince many ages are neceffary to teach them the art of transmitting their thoughts by permanent figns, and no lefs time was required to form. a regular language; and yet we have no fuch monuments, even in this police part of Europe. The art of writing was a long time unknown to all the north : the patriarch Conftantine, who wrote the hillory of Kiow in the Ruffian language, confesies, that the use of writing was not known in these countries in the fifth century.

LET others examine whether the Huns, the Slavi, and the Tartars, formerly conducted their wandering and familhed tribes towards the fource of the Borythenes; my defign is to defcribe the new world which the Czar Peter created, and not to engage in ufelefs attempts to clear up the chaos of antiquity. We fhould always keep in mind, that no

2.4

other why

What

amed

, who

area

done

is ou

inela

1000

020

顾

100-

đ

no family upon earth knows its first founder, and confequently, that no nation knows its first origin.

I USE the name of Ruffians to defignate the inhabitants of this great empire. That of Roxolanians, which was formerly given them, would indeed be more fonorous, but it is neceffary we fhould conform to the cuftom of the language in which we write. Gazettes and other memoirs have for fome time ufed the word Ruffians; but as this name has too great a likenefs to that of Pruffians, I shall abide by that of Rufs, which almost all our authors have given them. Befides, it appeared to me, that the most extensive people of the world ought to be known by fome appellation that may diffinguish them abfolutely from all other nations.

THIS empire is at prefent divided into fixteen large governments, that will one day be fubdivided, when the northern and eaftern countries come to be more inhabited.

THESE fixteen governments, which contain feveral immense provinces, are the following :

LIVONIA.

THE nearest province to Britain is that of Livonia, one of the most fruitful of the north. In the twelfth century the inbabitants were Pagans; at which time certain merchants of Bremen and Lubec traded to this country; and a body of religious crusaders, called *Port-Glaives*, (or fword-bearers) who were asterwards incorporated in the Teutonic order,

THE HISTORY

order, took poffeffion of this province, in the thirteenth century, at the time when the fury of the crutades armed the Christians against all who were not of their religion. Albert, margrave of Brandenburgh, grand maßer of these religious conquerors, made himself fovereign of Livonia and Brandenburg-Prussia, towards the year 1514. From that time, the Russian and Poles contended for the possible of this province. Soon afterwards it was invaded by the Swedes, and for a long while continued to be ravaged by these feveral powers Gustavus Adolphus having conquered it, it was then ceded to the Swedes in 1600, by the famous peace of Oliva; and, at length, Czar Peter took it, as will be seen in the course of this history.

COURLAND, joining to Livonia, is still in vaffalage to Poland, though it depends greatly upon Ruffia. These are the western limits of this empire in Christendom.

Of the government of Revel, Petersburg, and Wyburg.

MORE towards the north is the government of Revel and Effhonia. Revel was built by the Danes in the thirteenth century. The Swedes were in peff flion of Effhonia, from the time that this country put itfelf under the protection of that crown, in 1561. This is another of the conquefts of Peter the Great.

On the borders of Effhonia lies the gulph of Finland.

e this

ofth

O WE!

Brap

onque

Brat

Fra

forth

situ

Gi

15 12

- Will

m

n.

land. To the eaftward of this fea, and at the junction of the Neva with the lake Ladoga, is fituated Peterfburg, the most modern and best built city in the whole empire, built by Czar Peter, in spite of all the united obstacles which opposed its foundation.

THIS city is fituated on the gulph of Kronftat, in the midft of nine rivers, by which its different quarters are divided. In the centre of this city is an almost impregnable castle, built on an island, formed by the great course of the river Neva : feven canals are drawn from the rivers, and walh the walls of the royal palace of the admiralty, of the dockyard for the gallies, and of feveral buildings of manufactories. Thirty-five great churches help to adorn the city; among which, five are for foreigners, of the Roman Catholic, Calvinift, and Lutheran religions: these are as fo many temples erected for toleration, and as examples to other nations. There are five palaces; the old one, called the fummerpalace, fituated on the river Neva, has a very large and beautiful ftone baluftrade, which runs all along the river fide. The new fummer palace near the triumphal gate, is one of the fineft pieces of architecture in Europe. The admiralty buildings, the fchool for cadets, the imperial college, the academy of fciences, the exchange, the merchants warehoufes, and the dock-yards, are all magnificent fructures. The town house, the public difpensary, where all the veffels are made of porcelain, the court magazines, the foundery, the arfenal, the bridges, the markets, the iquares, the barracks for the horie and foot VOL. I.

THE HISTORY

28

foot guards, contribute at once to the embellifhment and fafety of the city, which is faid to contain at prefent four hundred thoufand fouls. In the environs of this city are feveral pleafure houfes, whofe magnificence aftonifhes all travellers. I here is one in particular which has water-works far fuperior to those of Verfailles. There was nothing of all this in 1702, the whole being then an impaffable morafs. Peterfburg is confidered as the capital of Iagria, a fmall province fubdued by Peter I. Wyburg, another of his comquefts, and that part of Finland which was loft, and ceded by the Swedes in 1742, makes another government.

ARCHANGEL.

HIGHER up mounting towards the north, is the province of Archangel, a country quite new to the fouthern nations of Europe. It took its name from St. Michael the Archangel, under whole protection it was put long after the Ruffians had embraced Chriftianity, which did not happen till the beginning of the eleventh century : and this province was not known to the other nations of Europe till the middle of the fixteenth. The Englifh, in 1922, endeavouring to find out a northeast passage to the East Indies, Chancellor, captain of one of the thips equipped for that expedition, discovered the port of Archangel in the White Sea; at that time it was a defect place, having only one convent, and a finall church, dedicated to St Michael the Archangel.

THE

OF RUSSIA.

THE English running up the river Dwina, arrived at the midland part of the country, and at length at Moscow. Here they easily made themfelves masters of the Russian commerce, which was removed from the city of Novogorod to this feaport, which is inacceffible indeed during feven months in the year; but, neverthele's, this trade proved more beneficial to the empire, than the fairs of Novogorod, that had fallen to decay in confequence of the wars with Sweden. The English obtained the privilege of trading thither without paying any duties; a manner of trading which is apparently the most beneficial to all nations. The Dutch foon came in for a share of the traffic to Archangel, then unknown to other nations.

enn

whee

aliti

le m

W

館

em

i pri

0112

LONG before this time, the Genoele and Venetians had opened a trade with the Ruffians by the mouth of the Tanais or Don, where they had built a town called Tana. This branch of the Italian commerce was deftroyed by the ravages of Tamerlane : but that of Archangel fublified, with great advantages both to the Englifh and Dutch, till the time that Peter the Great opened a paffage into his dominions by the Baltic fea.

RUSSIAN LAPLAND.

Of the Government of ARCHANGEL.

Towards the well of Archangel, and within its government, is Ruffian Lapland, the third part C 2 of

THE HISTORY

of this country, the two others belonging to Sweden and Denmark. This is a very large track, occupying about eight degrees of longitude, and extending in latitude from one polar circle to the North Cage. The inhabitants of this country were confusedly known to the ancients, under the name of Troglodytes and northern pigmies; names fuitable enough to men, who, for the most part, are not above four feet and an half high, and dwell in caverns; they are now just the fame people they were in former times. They are of a tawny colour, though the other people of the north are white; and for the most part of a very low fize, though their neighbours, and the people of Iceland, under the polar circle, are tail : they feem made for their mountainous country, being nimble, flout, and robuft ; their fkins are hard, the better to refift the cold, their thighs and legs are flender, their feet small, to enable them to run more nimbly amongst the rocks, with which their country is covered; they are paffionately fond of their own country, which none but themfelves can be pleafed with, and cannot live any where elfe. Some have affirmed, upon the credit of Olaus, that these people were originally natives of Finland, that they retired into Lapland, where they diminished in their fize : but this could not be otherwife, for why could not they have made use of lands lefs northerly, where the conveniences of life were to be had in greater plenty ? How comes it that they differ fo much from their pretended ancestors in features, figure, and complexion? Thus

OF RUSSIA.

WE.

and

Wete

s fait.

t, 28

Reiln

e the

aya

w fiz,

y fee

-

gsE

100

pda

fem

Will

ber

Thus one might, with as great reafon fay, that the grafs which grows in Lapland, is produced from that of Denmark, and that the fithes peculiar to their lakes, were the fpawn of those which came from Sweden. It is more likely that the Laplanders are like their animals, the produce of their own country, and that nature has made the one for the other.

THOSE who inhabit the borders of Finland, have adopted some of the expressions of their neighbours, which happens to all people: but when two nations give to things of common ufe, and established cuftoms, names absolutely different, it is a ftrong prefumption, that one of them is not a colony from the other. The Findlanders call a bear Karu, the Laplanders, Muriet : the fun in Finland is called Auringa, in Lapland Beve. Here is not the leaft analogy. The inhabitants of Finland, and Swedift. Lapland, formerly worshipped an idol, whom they called Iumalac; and fince the reign of Guftavus Adolphus, to whom they are indebted for the appellation of Lutherans, they call Jefus Chrift the fon of Iumalac. The Ruffian Laplanders are at prefent faid to be of the Greek church; but those who wander about the mountains of the North Cape, are fatisfied with adoring one God under certain großs forms, as has been the ancient cuftom of all the nations called Nomades, or wandering nations.

THIS fort of people, who are inconfiderable in numbers, have but very few ideas, and fo far are happy in not having more, which would only oc-C 3 cafion

3 \$

THE HISTORY

cafion them to have new wants which they could not fatisfy: at prefent they live contented, and free from difeafes, notwithstanding the exceffive rigour of their climate; they drink nothing but water, and arrive to a great age. The cuftom imputed to them of defiring ftrangers to lie with their wives and daughters, which they effeem as an honour done to them, probably comes from a notion of the superiority of strangers, and a defire of amending, by their means, the defects of their own race. This was a practice established amongst the virtuous Lacedaemonians. A hufband would beg as a favour, of a comely young man, to give him handfome children, whom he might adopt. Jealoufy, and the laws, hinder the reft of mankind from giving their wives up to the embraces of another; but the Laplanders have few or no laws, and are, in all probability, not given to jealoufy.

MOSCOW.

ASCENDING the river Dwina from North to South, we proceed up the country till we come to Molcow, the capital of the empire. This city was long the centre of the Ruffian dominions, before they were extended on the fide of China and Perfia.

Moscow, lying in fifty-five degrees and an half north latitude, in a warmer climate, and more fertile foil than Peterfburg, is fituated in the midft of a large and delightful plain on the river Mofkwa,

bluo

and

g but n in.

an ha

notinj

ofa

1011

出出

ld beg

e hig

10

nkiel

100

, 20

60

ie to

121

Per-

fer.

wa, and two leffer rivers, which are fwallowed up in the Occa, and afterwards run into the Wolga. This city, in the thirteenth century, confided only of fmall huts, peopled by a fet of miferable wretches, oppreffed by the descendants of Gengis-Khan.

THE Kremlin, which was the refidence of the great dukes, was not built till the fourteenth century; of fo little antiquity are the cities in this part of the world. This palace was constructed by Italian architects, as were feveral churches in the Gothic tafte, which then prevailed throughout all Europe. There are two built by the famous Ariftorle of Bologna, who flourished in the fifteenth century ; but the houles of the common people were no better than wooden huts.

THE first writer who gives us any information of Mofcow, was Olearius; who, in 1633, went thither as the companion of an embally from the duke of Holftein. And was prodigioully flruck with wonder at the immense extent of the city of Mofcow, with its five inclosures, particularly the magnificent one belonging to the czars, and with the Afiatic splendor which then reigned at that court. There was nothing equal to it in Germany at that time, nor any city near fo extensive or well peopled.

On the contrary, the Earl of Carlifle, who was Ambaffador from Charles II. to the czar Alexis, in 1603, complains in his account, that he could not meet with any one comfort of life in Molcow; no inns on the road, nor refreshments of any kind. One judged as a German, the other as an Englishman,

C 4

34

man, and both by comparison. The Englishman was shocked to observe that most of the Boyars, or Muscovite noblemen, slept upon boards or benches, with only the skins of animals under them; but this was the ancient practice of all nations. Their bouses were almost all built of wood, had fearcely any furniture; few or none of their tables were covered with linen; there the streets not paved; nothing agreeable; nothing convenient; very few artificers, and these few extremely rude, and employed only in works of absolute necessary. These people might have passed for Spartans, had they been fober.

BUT on days of ceremony, the court displays all the fplendour of a Perfian monarch. The earl fays, he could see nothing but gold and jewels on the robes of the czar and his courtiers. These dreffes were not manufactured in the country; and yet it is evident, that the court might have been the means of making the people industrious long before that time. In the reign of the czar Boris Godonow, the largest bell in Europe was cast at Mofcow; and in the patriarchal church, there were feveral ornaments of filver, of curious workmanfhip: but thefe works, which were made under the direction of Germans and Italians, were only tran-It is daily industry, and the constant fient efforts. practice of a great number of arts, that makes a flourishing nation. Poland, and the neighbouring nations, were at that time very little fuperior to the Ruffians. The handicraft trades had not arrived to greater persection in the north of Germany, nor were

35

were the fine arts much better known than in the middle of the feventeenth century.

10020

18, 01

iches.

bouis

ny fer

intered

ed only

al fan

ind re

en th

ngit

isGo

1

Will

(BH)

11

trab

teat

kes 1

ning

)出

DU

PER

THOUGH the city of Molcow, at that time, had neither the magnificence nor arts of our great cities in Europe ; yet its circumference of twenty miles; the part called the Chinese town, where all the curiofities of China are exhibited; the spacious quarter of the Kremlin, where flood the palace of the czars; the gilded domes, the lofty and furprifing towers ; and, in fine, the prodigious number of its inhabitants, amounting to near five hundred thousand: all this makes Mofcow one of the most confiderable cities in the world.

THEODORE, or Foedor, the eldeft brother to Peter the Great, began to embellish Moscow. He caused feveral large houfes to be built of ftone, though without any regular architecture. He encouraged the principal nobility of his court to build, advancing them money, and furnishing them with materials. He was the first who encouraged the breed of fine horfes, and made feveral other fine and useful embellishments. Peter, who was atten-tive to every improvement, took care not to neglect Mofcow at the time he was building Peterfburg; for he caufed it to be paved, adorned it with noble buildings, and enriched it with manufactures; and within these few years, Mr. de Showalow, high Chamberlain to the empress Elizabeth, daughter to Peter the Great, has founded an univerfity in this city. This is the fame perfon who furnished me with the materials, from which I have compiled the present history, and who was himself much more CS capable

capable to have wrote it, even in the French lan. guage, had not his great modefly made him give up the talk to me, as will evidently appear from his own letters on this subject, which I have deposited in the public library of Geneva.

SMOLENSKO.

WESTWARD of the Duchy of Molcow, is that of Smolensko, a part of the ancient Sarmatia Europea. The duchies of Mofcow and Smolenko composed what is properly called White Ruffia. Smolensko, which at first belonged to the great dukes of Ruffia, was conquered by the great duke of Lithuania, in the beginning of the fifteenth century, and was recovered one hundred years afterwards by its former kings. Sigifmund III. king of Poland, took poffession of it in 1611. The czar Alexis, father to Feter I. retook it again in 1005. fince which time it has always made a part of the Ruffian empire. The eulogium of Peter the Great, pronounced in the academy of fciences at Paris, takes notice, that before this time the Ruffians had made no conquests either to the West or South ; but this is certainly a miftake.

Of the government of NovoGOROD and KIOW, or the UKRAINE.

BETWEEN Peterfburg and Smolensko, lies the province of Novogorod; a country in which the ancient

37

ch lao im gin from li lepoliu

w, is in matin J. Smoleni the Bulk the progress the great du the progress the eccase the eccase the in 10 in

K 107/1

list

2005

ancient Slavi, or Sclavonians, made their first fettlements. But from whence came these Slavi, whose language has spread over all the north-east part of Europe? Sla signifies a chief, and Slave one belonging to a chief. All that we know concerning those ancient Slavi, is, that they were a race of conquerors; that they built the city of Novogorod the Great, fituated on a navigable river; that this city was for a long time in possession of a flourishing trade, and was a potent ally of the Hanse towns. The czar, John Basilowitz, made a conquest of it in 1467, and carried away all its riches, which contributed to the magnificence of the court of Moscow, which till that time was almost unknown.

To the fouth of the province of Smolensko, we meet with the province of Kiow, otherwife called the Leffer Ruffia, Red Ruffia, or the Ukraine, through which runs the Dneiper, called by the Greeks the Borifthenes. The difference of these two words, the one harfh to pronounce, and the other melodious, fhew us, among an hundred other proofs, the rudenefs of all the ancient people. of the north, in comparison of the graces of the Greek language. Kiow, the capital city, formerly Kilow, was founded by the emperors of Conflantinople, who made it a colony : here are still feveral Greek infcriptions, of upwards of one thousand two hundred years flanding, very legible. This is the only city of any antiquity in thefe countries, wherein the inhabitants have lived to long together without building walls. It was here that the great C 6. dukes

dukes of Russia held their residence in the eleventh century, before the Tartars fubdued Russia.

THE inhabitants of the Ukraine, called Coffacks, are a mixture of the ancient Roxolanians, Sarmatians and Tartars. Rome and Constantinople. though to long the miltreffes of other nations, are not to be compared in fertility with the Ukraine. Nature has there exerted her utmost efforts for the fervice of the inhabitants; but they have not improved those efforts by industry, living only upon the fpontaneous productions of that fruitful uncultivated foil, and the practice of robbery. Though fond to excels of that most valuable of all bleffings, liberty ; yet they were always in flavery, either to the Poles or the Turks, till the year 1654, when they fubmitted themselves to the arms of Russia, but with fome particular privileges. At length they were entirely fubdued by Peter the Great.

OTHER nations are divided into cities and towns; this into ten regiments. At the head of which is a chief, who is used to be elected by the majority of votes, and is called by the name of Hetman or Itman. This captain of the nation has not the supreme power. At present the Itman is a person nominated by the sovereign, from among the chief of the nobility; and is, in fact, no more than the governor of the province, like governors of the Pays d'Etats in France, that have retained fome privileges.

FORMERLY the inhabitants of this country were all either Pagans or Mahometans; but when they entered into the fervice of Poland, they were baptifed

tifed Chriffians of the Roman communion; and now, as they are in the fervice of Ruffia, they practife the rites of the Greek church.

veni

fich

jarm_k

ingh

15, 12

tim

for h

not in

122

Ibe

1 22

RI

63 I

hi

12

111

10

8

AMONGST these are comprised the Zaporavian Coffacks, who are much the fame as our Buccaneers, or Freebooters, desperate fellows, living upon rapine. They are diffinguished from all other people, by never admitting women to live among them; as the Amazons are faid never to have admitted any man. The women, whom they use for propagation, dwell upon other iflands on the river ; they have no marriages amongst them, nor any domeflic economy; they inrol the male children in their army, and leave the girls to the care of their mothers. Often a brother has children by his fifter, and a father by his daughter. They know no other laws than cuftoms introduced by neceffity: however, they make use of fome prayers from the Greek ritual. Fort St. Elizabeth has been lately built on the Borifthenes, to keep them in fubjection. They ferve as irregulars in the Ruffian armies, and woe be to those who fall into their hands.

Of the government of BELGOROD, WORONITZ, and NISCHGOROD.

To the north-east of the province of Kiow, between the Borifthenes and the Tanais, or the Don, is the government of Belgorod, which is as large as that of Kiow. This is one of the most fertile provinces

provinces of Russia, and furnishes Poland with a prodigious number of those large cattle, known by the name of the Ukraine oxen. These two provinces are protected from the incursions of the small Tartar tribes, by lines extending from the Borishenes to the Tanais, and well furnished with forts and redoubts.

ASCENDING northward we crofs the Tanais, and come into the government of Worownitz or Veronife, which extends to the banks of the Palus Mæotis. In the neighbourhood of the capital of Veronife, which is called by the Ruffians, Woronefteh, at the mouth of the river of the fame name, which falls into the Tanais, Peter the Great built his firft fleet; an undertaking which at that time was aftonifhing to the inhabitants of thefe vaft dominions. From thence we come to the government of Nifchgorod, abounding with grain, and watered by the river Wolga.

ASTRACAN.

FROM the latter province we proceed fouthward to the kingdom of Aftracan. This country extends from forty three and a half degrees north latitude, in a moft delightful climate, to near fifty, including as many degrees of longitude, as of latitude. It is bounded on one fide by the Caipian fea, and on the other by the mountains of Circaffia, firetching beyond the Cafpian, along mount Caucafus. It is watered by the great river Wolga, the

With

Wa

Tes

ù.

12

the Jaic, and feveral other leffer ftreams, between which, according to Mr. Perry, the English engineer, canals might be cut that would ferve as refervoirs to receive the overflowing of the waters; and by that means answer the fame purposes as the canals of the Nile, and greatly improve the fertility of the foil; but to the right and left of the Wolga and Jaic, this fine country was inhabited, or rather infested, by Fartars, who never improved the land, but have always lived as ftrangers and vagabonds in this part of the world.

PERRY the engineer, who was employed by Peter the Great in thefe parts, found thefe defarts covered with pafture, pulfe, cherry and almond trees, and large flocks of wild fheep, who fed in thefe defarts, and whofe flefh was most excellent. The inhabitants of these countries must be subdued and civilized, in order to fecond the efforts of nature, which has been forced in the climate of Petersburg.

THE kingdom of Aftracan is a part of the ancient Capfhak, conquered by Gengis-Khan, and afterwards by Famerlane, whofe dominions reached as far as Mofcow. The czar John Bafilides, grandfon of John Bafilowitz, and the greateft conqueror of all the Ruffian princes, delivered this country from the Tartarian yoke, in the fixteenth century, and added the kingdom of Aftracan to his other conquefts in 1554.

ASTRACAN is the boundary of Afia and Europe, and from its fituation is convenient to carry on a trade with both, as merchandifes may be conveyed from the Calpian fea, up to this town, by means of the

42

the Wolga. This was one of the grand fchemes of Peter the Great, and has been partly carried into execution. A whole fuburb of Aftracan is inhabited by Indians.

OREMBOURG.

To the fouth-east of the kingdom of Astracan, is a fmall country newly planted, called Orembourg. The town of this name was built in the year 1734. on the banks of the river Jaic. This province is covered with the branches of mount Caucafus. The paffes in thefe mountains, and of the rivers that run down from them, are defended by forts raifed at equal diffances. In this country, which was formerly uninhabited, the Persians come at prefent to hide, from robbers fuch of their effects as they have faved from the fury of the civil wars. Sothat the city of Orembourg is become the afylum. of the Perfians and their riches, and is grown confiderable by their calamities. The natives of Great Bukari come hither to trade, fo that it is become the flaple of AGa.

Of the government of CASAN, and of GREAT PERMIA.

BEYOND the Wolga and Jaic, towards the north, lies the kingdom of Cafan, which, like that of Afiracan, fell by partition to one of the fons of Gengis. 000

调

inh

122

NIT.

174

10)

111 111

1 H

偷

0

Gengis-Khan, and afterwards to a fon of Tamerlane, and was at length conquered by John Bafilides. It is still inhabited by a number of Mahometan Tartars. This vaft country extends as far as Siberia : it is evident it was formerly very flourishing and rich, and still preferves fome part of its prifline opulence. A province of this kingdom, called Great Permia, and fince Solikam, was the staple of the merchandifes of Perfia, and the furs of Tartary. There has been found in Permia a large quantity of the coin of the first Caliphe, and fome golden idols, belonging to the Tartars *; but thefe monuments of ancient riches were found in the midft of barren defarts and extreme poverty, where there were not the leaft traces of any traffick : revolutions of this kind may eafily happen in a barren country, feeing they fo often happen in the moft fruitful kingdoms.

THE famous Swedish prisoner Strahlemberg, who made fo good an use of his misfortunes, and who examined those vast countries with so much attention, was the first who gave an air of probability to a fact, which before had been always deemed incredible; namely, concerning the ancient commerce of these provinces. Pliny and Pomponius Mela relate, that, in the reign of Augustus, a king of Sueivi made a present to Metellus Celer of some Indians who had been cast by a storm on the coasts bordering on the Elbe. But how could inhabitants of India navigate the Germanic feas? This adventure

* Memoirs of Strahlemberg, confirmed by those fent me from Ruffia,

43

was

was deemed fabulous by the difcovery of the Cape of Good Hope. But formerly it was no more extraordinary to fee an Indian trading to the northweft of his country, than to fee a Roman go from India by the way of Arabia. The Indians went to Perfia, and thence embarked on the fea of Hyrcania, and afcending the Rha, now the Wolga, got to the Great Permia through the river Kama; from whence they might imbark again on the Black fea, or the Baltic. They have, in all times, been enterprifing men. The Tyrians undertook moft furprifing voyages.

IF after furveying all these vast provinces, we direct our eye towards the east, we shall find the limits of Europe and Afia again confounded. A new name should be given to this confiderable part of the globe. The ancients divided their known world into Europe, Afia, and Africa; but they had not feen the tenth part of it : hence it happens, that when we pass the Palus Mæotis, we no longer know where Europe ends, or Afia begins; all that tract of country lying beyond mount Taurus was diftinguished by the general appellation of Scythia, and afterwards by that of Fartary. It might not be improper, perhaps, to give the name of Terræ Arcticz, or Northern Lands, to that part of the globe extending from the Baltic fea to the confines of China; as that of Ferra Auftralis, or Southern Lands, are to that equally extensive part of the world, fituated under the Antarctic Pole, and which ferves to counterpoife the globe. Of

Of the government of SIBERIA, of the SAMOJEDES, the OSTIAKS, KAMTSHATKA, &c.

0 9 970

T

go ii Wei

情

雪

11

113

1,1

W.

it

-

in the

8)

m

i.

di

ti.

W.

1

SIBERIA, with the territories beyond it, extends from the frontiers of the provinces of Archangel, Refan, and Aftracan, eaftward as far as the fea of Japan. It joins the fouthern parts of Ruffia by mount Caucaíus; from thence, to the country of Kamtfhatka, is about one thousand two hundred computed French leagues; and from fouthern Tartary, which ferves as its boundary to the Frozen fea, about four hundred, which is the least breadth of the Ruffian empire. This country produces the richeft furs; to which its discovery was owing in the year 1563.

In the fixteenth century, in the reign of the czar John Bafilides, and not in that of Fœdor Johannowitz, a private perfon in the neighbourhood of Archangel, named Anika, one tolerably rich for his condition of life and country, took notice, that men of an extraordinary figure, and dreffed in a manner unknown to that country, and who fpoke a language underflood by no body but themfelves, came every year down a river which falls into the Dwina ‡, and brought martens and black foxes, which they exchanged for nails and pieces of glafs; juft as the firft favages of America ufed to truck their gold with the Spaniards : he ordered them to be followed by his fons and fervants, as far as their

+ Memoirs fent from Petersburg.

45

own

46

own country. These were the Samojedes, a people who feem to refemble the Laplanders, but are of a different race. 'They are, like that nation, unacquainted with the use of bread; and like them, they yoke rein deer to draw their fledges. They live in caverns and buts amidit the fnow *; but nature in other respects, has made a visible difference between thefe fort of men and the Laplanders. Their upper jaw projects forward, fo as to be on a level with their nofe, and their ears are higher. Both the men and the women have no hair but on their heads: and their nipple is as black as ebony. The Laplanders are diftinguished by no fuch marks. By memoirs sent me from these unknown countries, I have been informed, that the author of the natural hiftory of the king's garden, is miftaken, where, in speaking of many curiofities in human nature, he confounds the Lapland race with that of the Samojedes. There are many more different kinds of men than is commonly thought. The Samojedes, and the Hottentots, feem to be the two extremes of our continent; and if we observe the black nipples of the Samojedian women, and the apron with which nature has furnished the Hottentot women, and which hangs half way down their thighs, we shall have fome idea of the great variety of our animal species : a variety unknown to those inhabiting great cities, who are generally strangers to almost every thing which is not immediately within their view.

* Memoirs fent from Petersburg.

THE

2 10

22

R, 1

enji

etin

122

eber

The

letel

Bt

er i

in s

(this

10 10

013

h

mi

itali

10

THE Samojedes are as fingular in their moral as in their natural diffinctions; they pay no worthip to the fupreme being; they border upon Manicheifm, or rather upon the religion of the ancient Magi in this article, that they acknowledge a good and an evil principle. The horrible climate they inhabit may in fome measure excuse this belief, which is fo natural to those who are ignorant and miserable.

MURDER or theft is never heard of amonght them; being in a manner void of paffions, they are firangers to injuffice; there is no term in their language to denote vice and virtue; their extreme fimplicity has not yet permitted them to form abfiract ideas; they are wholly guided by fenfation; and this is perhaps an inconteftible proof that men are naturally fond of juffice, when not blinded by inordinate paffions.

Some of thefe favages were prevailed on to come to Mofcow, where many things they faw firuck them with admiration. They looked upon the emperor as their God, and voluntarily engaged to pay for themfelves and each countryman two martens or fables every year. Colonies were foon fixed beyond the Oby and the Irtis \dagger , and fome forts built. In the year 1595 a Coffack officer was fent into this country, who conquered it for the Czar with only a few troops and fome artillery, as Cortiz did Mexico; but he only made a conqueft of barren defarts.

+ In the Ruffian language Irtifch.

IN

48

In running up the Oby to the junction of the river Irtis with the Tobol, they found a little fettlement, which is now the town of Tobol 6, and capital of Siberia, a very confiderable place. Who could imagine that this country was for a long time the abode of those very Huns, who under Attila carried their depredations as far as the gates of Rome, and that thefe Huns came from the north of China ? The Ufbeck Tartars fucceeded the Huns. and the Ruffians the Ufbecks. The poffeffion of thefe favage lands has been difputed with as much favage fury, as that of the most fertile provinces. Siberia was formerly more populous than it is at prefent, especially towards the fouthern parts; if we may judge from the rivers and fepulchral monuments.

ALL this part of the world, from the fixtieth degree of latitude, or thereabouts, and as far as those frozen mountains which border on the north feas, is entirely different from the regions of the temperate zone; the earth produces neither the fame plants, nor the fame animals, nor are there the fame fort of fishes in their lakes and rivers.

BELOW the country of the Samojedes lies that of the Ofliaks, along the river Oby. Thefe people have no refemblance or connection in any refpect with the Bamojedes, unlefs that like them and all the first race of men, they are hunters, fishermen, and shepherds; fome of them have no religion, not being tormed into any fociety, and the others

§ In the Ruffian language Toboliky.

who

d

Degt

1 13

四

her

際

para;

御

19

who live together in herds or clans, have a kind of worfhip, and pray to the principal object of their wants; they worfhip the fkin of a fheep, becaufe this creature is of all others the moft ufeful to them; juft as the Egyptian hufbandmen made choice of an ox, as an emblem of the Deity who created that creature for the ufe of man.

THE Offiaks have likewife other idols, whofe origin and worfhip are as little worth our notice as their worfhippers. There were fome converts to Chriftianity made amongft them in the year 171.; but thefe, like the loweft of our peafants, are Chriflians without knowing what they profefs. Several writers pretend that thefe people were natives of Great Permia, but as Great Permia is in a manner a defart, we cannot well imagine that thofe people fhould fettle at fo great a diffance, and in fo wretched a country. This matter is not worth clearing up; as any nation, which has not cultivated the polite arts, deferves to remain in obfcurity.

In the country of the Olliaks in particular, and amongft their neighbours the Burates and Jukutians, they often difcover a kind of ivory under ground, the nature of which is yet unknown. Some take it to be a fort of foffil, and others the tooth of a species of elephants, the breed of which have been deftroyed: but where is the country that does not afford some natural productions, which at once aftonish and confound philosophy?

SEVERAL mountains in this country abound with the amianthes or albeflor, a kind of incombuflible

50

buffible flax, of which a fort of linen cloth and paper is fometimes made.

To the fouth of the Oftiaks are the Burates, another people, who have not yet embraced Christianity. Eastward there are feveral hords, whom the Russians have not yet entirely fubdued.

NONE of these people have the least knowledge of the kalendar. They reckon their time by fnows, and not by the apparent motion of the fun: as it fnows regularly, and for a long time every winter, they fay, 'I am fo many fnows old,' just as we fay, I am fo many years old.

AND here I must mention an extraordinary fact related by the Swedish officer Strahlemberg, who was taken priloner in the battle of Pultowa, and lived fifteen years in Siberia, and made a furvey of that country. He fays that there are still fome remains of an ancient people, whole fkin is spotted or variegated with different colours, and that he him -. felf had feen some of them; and the fact has been confirmed to me by Ruffians born at Toboliky. The variety of the human species feems to be greatly diminished, as we find very few of these extraordinary people, and they have probably been exterminated by fome other race : for inftance, there are very few Albinos, or White Moors ; one of them was prefented to the academy of sciences at Paris, which I faw It is the fame with respect to feveral other forcies of animals which are fcarce.

As to the Borandians, of whom mention is made fo frequently in the learned hiftory of the king's garden,

garden, my memoirs acquaint me, that this race of people is entirely unknown to the Ruffians.

othy

ates, 1

Chi

rhan

non

byin

順計

1.E

än

明日

9,21

(m)

NE

5

们

12

ALL the fouthern part of these countries is peopled by numerous bodies of Fartars. The ancient Turks came from this part of Fartary to conquer these extensive countries, of which they are at prefent in possession. The Calmucks and Moguls are the very Scythians who, under Madies, became masters of Upper Asia, and conquered Cyaxares king of the Medes. They are the men, whom Gengis Khan and his fons led afterwards as far as Germany, and was termed the Mogul empire under Tamerlane. These people assorid a lively picture of the vicifitudes which have happened to all nations; fome of their hords, fo far from being formidable now, are become tributaries to Russia.

THIS is the fituation of every particular nation of Calmucks, dwelling between Siberia, and the Cafpian fea, where, in the year 172c, was difcovered a fubterraneous houfe of fione, with urns, lamps, ear-rings, an equeffrian flatue of an oriental prince, with a diadem on his head, two women feated on thrones, and a roll of manufcripts, which were fent by Peter the Great to the academy of infcriptions at Paris, and proved to be written in the Thibet language : all thefe plainly flow, that the liberal arts formerly refided in this now barbarous country, and are laffing evidences of the truth of what Peter the Great was wont feveral times to fay, viz. that the arts had made the tour of the univerfe.

THE last province is Kamtshatka, the most east-Vol. 1. D ern

ern part of the continent. The inhabitants were abfolutely void of all religion when this country was first difcovered. The north part of this country likewife abounds with fine furs, with which the inhabitants clothe themfelves in winter, though they go naked all the fummer feason The first difcoverers were furprifed to find in the fouthern parts men with long beards, while in the northern parts, from the country of the Samojedes, as far as the mouth of the river Amur, they have no more beards than the Americans Thus, in the empire of Ruffia, there is a greater number of different fpecies, more oddities, and a greater diversity of manners, and variety of cultoms, than in any country of the world.

THE first discovery of this province was made by a Coffack officer, who went by land from Siberia to Kamtshatka in 1701, by order of Peter the Great, who, notwithstanding his misfortune at Narva, still continued to extend his concern for the most extreme parts of his dominions. Afterwards, in 1724, fometime before his death, in the midst of his great exploits, he fent captain Bering, a Dane, with express orders to find out, if poffible, a paffage by the fea of Kamtshatka, to the coast of America. Bering did not fucceed in his first attempt; but the empress Anne fent him out again in 733. M. Spengenbe g, captain of a thip, his affociate in this voyage, fet out the first from Kamtthatka, but could not put to fea till the year 1739, fo much time was taken up in getting to the port where they were to imbark, in building and fitting out

5 W?!

the

訪け

he em

20101

onteil

s. At

in Be

histi

1883

o the

out the fhips, and providing the neceffaries Spengenberg failed as far as the north of Japan, through a fireight, formed by a long chain of illands, and returned without having different more than the paffage.

IN 17 1, Bering cruised all over this sea, in company with De L'Isle de la Croyere, the aft onomer, of the fame family of De L'Ifle, which has produced fuch excellent geographers : another captain likewife failed upon the fame difcovery. They both reached the coaft of America, to the northward of California. Thus the north-east paffage, fo long lought after, was at length difcovered ; but there were no provisions to be met with in thefe Their fresh water was spent, and barren coafts. many of the crew perifhed with the fcurvy. They faw the northern bank of California for above an hundred miles, and faw fome leathern canoes, with just fuch a fort of people in them as the Canadians. All their endeavours, however, prov-Bering ended his life in an ifland, to ed fruitlefs. which he gave his name. The other captain, happening to be closer in with the Californian coaft, fent ten of his people on fhore, who never return-The captain, alter waiting for them in vain, ed. found himfelt obliged to return to Kamtshatka, and De L'Isle died as he was going on shore. Such are the misfortunes that have attended every new attempt upon the northern feas. But what advantages may yet arife from these powerful and dangerous discoveries, time alone must reveal.

WE have now defcribed all the different pro-D 2 vinces

54

vinces that compose the Russian dominions, from Finland to the sea of Japan. The largest parts of this empire have been united at different times, as has been the case in all other kingdoms in the world. The Scythians, Huns, Massagetes, Slavians. Cimbrians, Getes, and Sarmatians, are now subjects of the Czar. The Russians, properly so called, are the ancient Roxolani or Slavi.

UPON reflection, we shall find that most states were formed after this manner. The French are an affemblage of Goths, of Danes, called Normans, of northern Germans, called Burgundians; of Franks, Alemans, and some Romans mixed with the ancient Celtæ. In Rome and Italy there are many families descended from the people of the north, but none fprung from the ancient Romans. The fovereign pontiff is frequently fprung from a Lombard, a Goth, a Teuton, or a Cimbrian. The Spaniards are a race of Arabs, Carthaginians, Jews, Tyrians, Viligoths, and Vandals, incorporated with the ancient inhabitants of the country. When nations are thus intermixed, it is a long time before they are civilized, or even before their language is formed. Some indeed receive thefe improvements fooner, others later. Polity and the liberal arts are fo difficult to eftablish, and the new railed fabrick fo often deftroyed by revolutions, that we may wonder all other nations are not as barbarous as the Tartars.

CHAP.

55

PO CLED SE CRED E LOLOLOS SE DO

fron arts ú res, a

in in Shiri R nit

periti

enci e

lorean ant; 1

xeini

thees

Rom

E all

E.]

助即

That

能加

關

HEE

ent

i

til

anto

CE

CHAP. H.

Continuation of the defcription of Russia, population, finances, armies, customs, religion. State of Rusfia before Peter the Great.

" H E more a country is civilized the better is it peopled. Thus China and India are the most populous of all other empires, because that after the multitude of revolutions, which have changed the face of the earth, thefe two nations made the earlieft establishments in fociety. Their government having fublifted upwards of four thoufand years, fuppofes, as we have already obferved, many effays and efforts in preceding ages. The Ruffians came very late; and as the arts having been introduced amongst them in their full perfection, it has happened, that they made more progrefs in fifty years, than any other nation has made in five hundred. The country is far from being populous, in proportion to its extent; but fuch as it is, it has as great a number of inhabitants as any other flate in Christendom. I might affert from the capitation lifts, and the regifter of merchants, artificers, and male peafants, that Ruffia, at prefent, contains at leaft twenty four millions of inhabitants : of D. 3

of thefe twenty four millions, the molt part are villains or bendmen, as in Poland, feveral provinces of Germany, and formerly throughout all Europe. The effate of a gentleman in Ruffia and Poland is computed, not by his increase in money, but by the number of his flaves.

THE following is a lift taken in 1747, of all the males who paid the capitation or poll-tax.

Merchants or tradefmen 108000 Workmen - -16500 Peafants incorporated with the merchants and workmen - -1.50 Peafants called Odonofkis, who contribute to maintain the militia - - 430220 Others who did not contribute thereto 20080 Workmen of different trades, whole parents are unknown · · · ICCO Others who are not incorporated in the class of workmen - - - 4700 Peafants immediately dependent on the crown, about - - - 555000 Perfons employed in the mines belonging to the crown, partly Chriftians, partly Mahometans and Pagans -64000 Other perfons of the crown, who work in the mines, and private manufactures 24200 New converts to the Greek church \$7000 Tartars and Offiaks (peafants) - 241000 Mourfes, Tartars, Morduats, and others, whether Pagans or Chriftians, employed by the admiralty 7800 Tartars.

are vil ovince Europe olandi but b

ofalld

19800 1690 8

1,1 e 43011 260k

• 1011 • • 4151 1

55500

6400

2410 5700 24100

geri Partan

Tartars subject to contribution, called Tep-
teris, Bobilitz, &c 28000
Bondmen to feveral merchants, and other
privileged people, who, without poffef-
fing any lands, are allowed to have
flaves 9100
Peafants defigned for the maintenance of
the crown 4,8000
Peafants on the lands belonging to her
majefty, independently of the rights of
the crown 60500
Peafants on the lands confifcated to the
crown
Bondmen belonging to gentlemen 355000
Bondmen belonging to the affembly of the
clergy, and who defray their expences 37500
Bondmen belonging to bishops - 116400
Bondmen belonging to convents, whofe
numbers were reduced by Peter the
Great 721500
Bondmen belonging to the cathedral and
parish churches 23700.
Pealants employed as labourers in the
docks of the admiralty, or in other
public works, about - 4000
Labourers in the mines, and in private ma-
nufactures 16000
Peafants on the lands affigned to the prin-
cipal manufactures 14500
Labourers in the mines belonging to the
CROWD 3000
D A Baltards

57.

58

Bastards brought up by the priests - 49 Sectaries called Raskolniky - - 2200

Total 6646390

HERE is in a round number, fix millions fix hundred forty-fix thousand three hundred and ninety male perfons, who pay the poll-tax. In this number are included boys and old men, but girls and women are not reckoned, nor boys born between the making of one register of the lands and another. Now, if we only triple the number of heads, subject to be taxed, including women and girls, we shall find near twenty millions of fouls.

To this number we may add the military lift, which amounts to three hundred and fifty thousand men. Befides, neither the nobility nor clergy, who are computed at two hundred thousand, are reckoned in this capitation.

FOREIGNERS of whatever country or profession, are likewife exempt; as also the inhabitants of the conquered countries, namely, Livonia, Estonia, Ingria, Carelia, and a part of Finland, the Ukraine, and the Don Cossacks, the Calmucks, and other Tartars, Samojedes, the Laplanders, the Ostiacks, and all the idolatrous people of Siberia, a country larger than China, are not reckoned in the lift.

By this calculation, it is impossible that the total of the inhabitants of Russia thould amount to lefs than twenty-four millions. At this computation, there are eight perfons to every fquare mile. The English embassiador mentioned before, allows allows only five; but he certainly was not furnished with such faithful memoirs, as those with which I have been favoured.

220

64631

lions (

121.

men, h

unbri

finit

抽掉

调新

212 (1)

onia, b

ad out

)fiid

COLLE

朏

hai in

opati

0.8

fquat

beforg

allotti

Russia therefore is exactly five times lefs populous than Spain, but contains four times the number of inhabitants: it is near as populous as France or Germany; but if we confider its prodigious extent, the number of fouls is thirty times lefs.

IN regard to this enumeration there is one important remark to be made, namely, that out of fix millions, fix hundred and forty thousand people liable to the poll-tax, there are nine hundred thoufand that belong to the clergy of Russia, without reckoning the clergy of the conquered countries, of the Ukraine, and Siberia.

THEREFORE, out of feven perfons liable to the poll tax, the clergy have one; but neverthelefs they are far from pofferfing the feventh part of the whole revenues of the flate, as is the cafe in many other kingdoms, where they have at leaft a feventh of all eflates; for their peafants pay a capitation to the fovereign; and the other taxes of the crown of Ruffia, in which the clergy have no fhare, are very confiderable.

THIS valuation is very different from that of all other writers who have made mention of Ruffia; fo that foreign miniflers who have transmitted memoirs of this flate to their courts have been greatly mistaken. The archives of the empire are the only things to be confidered.

lt is very probable, that Ruffia has been much more populous than it is at prefent; before the D 5 fmall-

imall-pox that came from Arabia, and the great pox came from America, had ravaged thefe climates, where they have now taken root Thefe two fcourges have depopulated the world more than all its wars, the one owing to Mahomet, and the other to Chriftopher Columbus. The plague, originally of Africa, feldom approaches the countries of the north. Befides, the people of the north, from Sarmatia, to the Tartars who dwell beyond the great wall, having overfpread the world by their irruptions, this ancient nurfery of men muft have been firangely diminifhed.

In this vaft extent of country, there are faid to be about feven thousand four hundred monks, and five thousand fix hundred nuns, not with ftanding the care taken by Peter the Great to reduce their numbers; a care worthy the legislator of an empire, where the human race principally fail. These thirteen thousand perfons, thus cloiftered and loft to the ftate, have (as the reader may have remarked) seven hundred and twenty thousand bondmen to till their lands, which is evidently too great a number. There cannot be a ftronger proof of the difficulty of eradicating abuses of a long ftanding.

I FIND, by a flate of the revenues of the empire in 1725, that reckoning the tribute paid by the Tartars, with all taxes and duties in money, the fum total amounted to thirteen millions of rubles, which make fixty five millions of French livres, exclusive of tributes in kind. This moderate fum was at that time fufficient to maintain three hundred and thirty nine thousand five hundred men,

greath

clima

wo for

120 2

e other

riginali

ies di

iom Sa

greate

iption, i in lina;

11 578

nonks, i Randingi

therst

22 (01)

Thei

101

Ran

ondati

it a last

the ent

aidy

0557

eratel

iree it

ret 2

as well fea as land forces: but both the revenues of the crown and the number of troops are greatly augmented fince that time.

THE cultoms, diets, and manners of the Ruffians, ever bore a greater refemblance to those of A fia than to those of Europe : fuch was the old cuftom of receiving tribute in kind, of defraying the expences of ambaffadors on their journeys, and during their refidence in the country, and of never appearing at church, or before the throne with a fword; an oriental cuftom, directly the reverse of that ridiculous and barbarous one amongst us. of addreffing ourfelves to God, to our king, to our friends, and to our women, with an offenfive weapon, which hangs down to the bottom of the leg. The long robe worn on public days had a more noble air. than the fhort habits of the weltern nations of Europe A tunic lined and turned up with fur, with a long feimar, adorned with jewels for feftival days; and those high turbans, which add to the flature, were much more firiking to the eye than our perukes and clofe coats, and more fuitable to cold climates; but this ancient drefs of all nations feems not to be fo well contrived for war, nor fo convenient for working people. Moft of their other cuftoms were ruftic; but we muft not imagine, that their manners were as barbarous as reprefented by fome hiltorians. Albert Krants relates a flory of an Italian ambaffador, whom the Czar ordered to have his hat nailed on his head, for not pulling it off while he was making his fpeech to him. O-D 6 there

thers attribute this adventure to a Tartar, and others again to a French ambaffador.

OLEARIUS pretends, that Czar Michael Theodorowitz banished the marquis Exideuil, ambaffador from Henry IV. of France, into Siberia; but it is certain, that this monarch fent no ambaffador to Mofcow, and that there never was a marquis of Exideuil. In the fame manner do travellers speak about the country of Borandia, a place that never existed, and of the trade they have carried on with the people of Nova Zembla, a country fcarcely inhabited, and the long conversations they have had with some of the Samojedes, as if they understood their language. Were the enormous compilations of voyages to be purged of every thing that is not true or useful in them, both the works and the public would be gainers by it.

THE Ruffian government refembled that of the Turks, in refpect to the ftanding forces, or guards, called Strelitzes, who, like the Janizaries, fometimes difpofed of the crown, and frequently difturbed the flate as much as they defended it. Their number was about forty thoufand. Thofe who were difperfed in the provinces, fubfifted by robbery and plunder; thofe in Mofeow lived like citizens, fullowed trades, did no duty, and carried their infolence to the greateft excefs; in fhort, there was no other way to preferve peace and good order in the kingdom, but by breaking them; a very neceffary, and at the fame time a very dangerous flep.

THE public revenue does not exceed five millions of rubles, or about twenty five millions of li-

vres.

nd ob

nael]

1, 2

ein;

ambié

mare

thata

caret

y tau under

ompile

(社社)

ks mi

Juin

blen

tell

1

fit)

vres. This was fufficient when Peter the Great came to the crown to maintain the ancient mediocrity, but was not a third part of what was neceffary to raife them from an obfcure flate, and to render himfelf and people formidable in Europe : but indeed many of their taxes were paid in kind, according to the Furkith cuffom, which is lefs burthenfome to the people than that of paying their tributes in money.

Of the title of CZAR.

WITH regard to the title of Czar, it may poffibly come from the Tzars or Techars of the kingdom of Cafan. When John, or Ivan Bafilides, compleated the conqueft of this kingdom in the fixteenth centu v, which had been begun by his grandfather, who afterwards loft it, he affumed this title, which his fucce fors have retained ever fince. Before John Bahlides, the fovereigns of Ruffia took the title of Welike Knez, i. e. Great prince, great lord, great chief, which the Christian nations a terwards rendered by that of great duke. Czar Michael I heodorowitz, when he received the Holftein embaffy, took to himfelf the following ticles : " Great knez, and " great lord, confervator of all the Ruffias, prince 4 of Woledomer, Molcow, Novogorod, &c. tzar of " Cafan, tzar of Aftracan, and tzar of Siberia." . Tzar was, therefore, a title belonging to thefe eaftern princes; and, therefore, it is more probable to have been derived from the Tihas of Perlia, than from the

the Roman Cæfars, whole name never reached the cars of the Siberian Izars, on the banks of the Oby.

No title, however pompous, is of any confequence if those who bear it are not great and powerful of themselves. The word *emperor*, which originally fignified no more than general of the army, became the title of the fovereign of the Roman republic: it is now given to the supreme governor of all the Russ, more justly than to any other potentate, if we consider the power and extent of his dominions.

RELIGION.

THE effablished religion of this country has ever fince the eleventh century been that of the Greek church, so called in opposition to the Latin : though there were always a greater number of Mahometan and Pagan provinces, than of those inhabited by Chrittians. Siberia, as far as China, was in a state of idolatry; and in some of the provinces, they were utter firangers to all religion.

PERRY, the engineer, and Baron Strahlemberg, who both refided fo many years in Rufha, tell us, that they found more good faith and probity among the Pagans, than the other inhabitants; not that Paganifm made them more virtuous; but their manner of living, which was that of the primitive ages, freed them from all tumultuous paffions; and, in confequence, they were known for their integrity.

CHRISTIANITY was not propaged in Ruffia, and the other countries of the north, till very late.

It

hell

10103

Net

nim

, bera

tept

of all

porent

is in

tr in

the Ge

abona

abited

theyn

lenk

, 101

17 221

DE L

HI II

化带

and

Rui

丁上

It is faid that a princefs, named Olha, first introduced it, about the end of the tenth century, as Clotilda, niece to an Arian prince, did among the Franks; the wife of Miceflaus, duke of Poland, among the Poles; and the fister of the emperor Henry II. among the Hungarians. Women are naturally eafily perfuaded by the ministers of religion, and as eafily perfuade the men.

IT is further added, that this prince's Olha caufed herfelf to be baptifed at Conftantinople, by the name of Helena; and that as foon as the embraced Christianity, the emperor John Zimifces fell in love with her. It is most likely that she was a widow ; however, the refused the emperor. The example of the princefs Olha, or Olga, as the is called, did not at first make any great number of profelytes. Her fon ‡, who reigned a long time, was not of the fame way of thinking as his mother; but her grandion Wolodimer, who was born of a concubine, having mounted the throne, fued for the alliance of Bafiles, emperor of Conftantinople, but could obtain it only on condition of receiving baptifm : and this event, which happened in the year nine hundred and eighty feven, is the epocha when the Greek church was eftablished in Ruffia. Photius, the patriarch, fo famous for his immense learning, his disputes with the church of Rome, and for his misfortunes, fent a parson to baptife Wolodimer, in order to add this part of the world to the patriarchal fee §.

‡ His name was Sowastowslaw.

§ This anecdote is taken from a private M. S. intitled, " The Ec-WOLODIMER

WOLODIMER thus completed the work which his grandmother had begun. A Greek was made the first Metropolitan, or Patriarch of Ruffia; and from this time, the Ruffians adopted an alphabet, partly derived from the Greek. This would have been of advantage to them, had they not flill retained the principles of their language, which is the Sclavonian, in every thing, but a few terms relating to their liturgy and church government. One of the Greek patriarchs, named Jeremiah, having a fuit depending before the Divan, took a journey to Molcow to folicit the affillance of that court; where, after fome time, he refigned his authority over the Ruffian churches, and confectated the Archbishop of Novogorod, named Job, patriarch. This was in one thousand five hundred and eighty eight, from which time the Ruffian church became as independent as the empire. The patriarch of Ruffia has ever fince been confectated by the Ruffian bifhops, and not by the patriarch of Conflantinople. He ranked in the Greek church next to the patriarch of Jerufalem ; but he was in fact the only free and powerful patriarch, and confequently, the only real one. Those of Jerusalem, Constantinople, Antioch, Alexandria, are mercenary chiefs of a church, enflaved by the Turks ; and even the patriarchs of Jerufalem and Antioch are no longer confidered as fuch, having no more credit or influence in Turkey, than the rabins of the Jewish lynagogues fettled there.

clefattical Government of Ruffia," which is likewife deposited in the public library.

PETER

fil

for

001

by

ly

wł

25

21

les

hi

ly

Ci

110

au

in

8

Ci

le

p

I

1

3

e

h

C,

th

L With

25 13

Tez ; z

alpha

out h

ichin

TER

ist. (

h, hi

s antie

Crated

pate

and th

ch bea natriael

ythe

nestu

at the

lequest

Conten

訂信

(013

no kaj

OF III

CTU

helt

Peri

67

PETER the Great was defcended in a direct line from a perfon who became patriarch of all the Ruffias. These new prelates foon wanted to thare the fovereign authority with the Czars. They thought it not enough that their prince walked bare-headed once a year before the patriarch, leading his horse by the bridle. These external marks of respect only ferved to encrease their thirst for rule; a pation which proved the fource of great troubles in Ruffia, as it has done in other countries.

NICON, a perfon whom the monks look upon as a faint, and who was patriarch in the reign of Alexis, the father of Peter the Great, wanted to raife his dignity above that of the throne ; for he not only affumed the privilege of fitting by the fide of the Czar in the fenate, but pretended that neither war nor peace could be made without his confent. His authority was fo great, that being fupported by his immenfe wealth, and by his intrigues with the clergy and the people, he kept his mafter in a kind of fubjection. He had the boldness to excommunicate fome fenators who oppofed his excellive intolence; till at length, Alexis finding himfelf not powerful enough to depute him by his own authority, was obliged to convene a fynod of all the bishops. There the patriarch was accused of having received money from the Poles ; and being convict. led, was deposed and confined for the remainder of his days in a monaftery; after which the prelates chofe another patriarch.

FROM the first planting of Christianity in Russia, there have been several sects there, as well as in other

68

ther countries; for fects are as frequently the fruits of ignorance, as of pretended knowledge: but Ruffia is the only Christian state of any confiderable extent, in which religion has not excited civil wars, though it has felt fome occasional tumults.

THE Rafkolnikys, who confift at prefent of a. bout two thousand males, and who are mentioned in the foregoing lift t, are the most ancient fect of any in this country. It was established in the twelith century, by fome bigots, who had a fuperficial knowledge of the New l'effament : they made use then, and still do, of the old pretence of all fectaries, that of following the letter, and acculed all other Chriftians of remiffnels. They would not permit a prieft, who had drank brandy, to confer baptilm; they affirmed, in the words of our Saviour, that there is no precedency among the faithful; and held, that a Chriftian might kill himfelf for the love of his Saviour. According to them, it is a great fin to repeat the halleluja three times; and, therefore, repeat it only twice. The mark of the crofs is to be made only with three fingers. In other respects, no fociety can be more regular or ftrict in its morals. They live like the quakers, and do not admit any other Christians into their affemblies, which is the reafon that these have accused them of all the abominations of which the heathens accufed the primitive Galileans; thete latter, the Gnoffics, and with which the Roman Catholics have charged the Protestants. They have been frequently acculed

\$ See page 58.

of of with The have to l flam ther I are tim nun the circ Was pla ad 211 th 01 en gr ft d er

arl

Tab

1

\$

ferk

tici

icia:

eż.

Aurie

otta

nit:

湖门

Ha.

eal

21 12

ett.

OFF

et R

11

i B

01

COL

hiji

江戸

of killing an infant, and drinking its blood; and of mixing together in their private ceremonies, without diffinction of kindred, age, or even of fex. They have been perfecuted at times, and then they have thut themfelves up in their hamlets, fet fire to their houfes, and thrown themfelves into the flames. Peter took the only method of reclaiming them, which was by letting them live in peace.

But to conclude; in all this vaft empire, there are but twenty-eight epifcopal fees, and in Peter's time, there were but twenty-two. This fmall number was, perhaps, one of the caufes to which the Ruffian church owes its tranquillity. So very circumferibed was the knowledge of the clergy, that the Czar Theodore, brother to Peter the Great, was the first who introduced the custom of finging pfalms in churches.

THEODORE and Peter, efpecially the latter, admitted indifferently into their councils and their armies, those of the Greek, and the Latin, the Lutheran, and the Calvinist communion, leaving every one at liberty to ferve God after his own confeience, provided he did his duty to the state. At that time, there was not one Latin church in this great empire of two thousand leagues, till Peter established fome new manufactures at Aftracan, when there were about fixty Roman Catholic families, under the direction of the capuchins; but the Jesuits endeavouring to establish themselves in his dominions, he drove them out by an ed ct. published in the month of April 1718. He tolerated the capuchins

fians

the

they

befie

perot

whol

tefti

min

Ruf

len

larg

ruit

nei

C

W

e

n

puchins as an infignificant let of monks, but confidered the Jefuits as dangerous politicians.

THE Greek church has at once the honour and fatisfaction to fee its communion extended throughout an empire of two thousand leagues in length, while that of Rome is not in possession of half that tract in Europe. Those of the Greek commuhion have, at all times, been particularly attentive to maintain an equality between theirs and the Latin church; and always upon their guard against the zeal of the see of Rome, imputing it to ambition; because, in fact, that church, whose power is wery much circumscribed in our hemisphere, and yet affumes the title of universal, has always endeavoured to act in such a manner as to deferve that title.

THE Jews never made any fettlement in Ruffa, as they have done in moft of the other flates of Europe, from Conftantinople to Rome. The Ruffians have carried on their trade by themfelves, or by the help of the nations fettled among them. Theirs is the only country of the Greek communion, where fynagogues are not intermixed with Chriflian temples.

Conclusion of the state of Russia before Peter the GREAT.

RUSSIA is indebted folely to the Czar Peter for its great influence in the affairs of Europe; being of no confideration in any other reign, fince it embraced Chrittianity. Before this period, the Ruffians

71

fians made the fame figure on the Black Sea that the Normans did afterwards on the coafts of the ccean. In the reign of the emperor Heraclius, they fitted out an armament of forty thousand small barks, appeared before Confiantinople, which they befieged, and imposed a tribute on the Greek ema perors; but the grand knez Wolodimer, being TE wholly taken up with the care of eftablishing Chriflianity in his dominions, and wearied out with inune h teftine broils in his own family, weakened his do-11154 minions by dividing them between his children. Ne m They almost all fell a prey to the Fartars, who held Russia in subjection near two hundred years. At (犯) length John Bafilides freed it from flavery, and en-間言 larged its boundaries; but after his time, it was 8世 ruined again by civil wars. th

erta

Te

ntia

1 200

000

10

Pa

BEFORE the time of Peter the Great, Ruffia was neither fo powerful, fo well cultivated, fo populous, nor fo opulent as at prefent. It had no poffeffions in Finland, nor in Livonia; and this latter alone had been long worth more than all Siberia. The Coffacks were still unfubjected, nor were the people of Aftracan reduced to obedience; what little trade was carried on, was rather to their difadvantage. The White Sea, the Baltic, the Pontus Euxinus, the fea of Aloph, and the C fpian fea, were entirely useless to a nation that had not a fingle ship, nor even a term in their language to express a fleet. If nothing more had been neceffary but to be fuperior to the Fartars, and the other nations of the north, as far as China, the Ruffians undoubtedly had that advantage ;

tor

lu

of

of

wer

Val

r

B

W

21

e

I

m

E

t

3

(

1

ŀ

72

advantage; but they wanted to be brought upon an equality with civilized nations and to be in a condition one day of even furpating feveral of them. Such an undertaking appeared altogether impracticable, inafmuch as they had not a fingle fhip at fea, and were abfolutely ignorant of military difcipline by land; nay, the most common manufactures were hardly encouraged, and agriculture itfelf, the primum mobile of trade, lay neglected. This requires the utmost attention and encouragement on the part of a government; and it is to this that the English are indebted, for finding in their corn, a treasure far fuperior to their woollen manufacture.

THIS groß neglect of the neceffary arts fufficiently thews, that the people of Ruffia had no idea of the polite arts, which become neceffary in their turn, when we have been properly cultivated. They might indeed have fent fome of the natives to gain instruction among foreigners; but the difference of languages, manners, and religion, opposed it. Befides, there w s a law of flate and religion equally facred and destructive to the welfare of the community, which prohibited any Ruffian from going out of his country, and thus condemned this people to eternal ignorance. They were in poffession of the most extensive dominions in the world, and yet every improvement was wanted amongst them. At length Peter was born, and Ruffia became a civilized fate.

HAPPILY, of all the great lawgivers who have lived in the world, Peter is the only one whole hiftory tory is well known. Those of Theseus and Romulus, who did far less than him, and of the founders of all civilized states, are blended with the most abfurd fiftions; whereas here, we have the advantage of writing truths, which would pass for fictions, were they not fo well attested.

tim

101

im

lin

1022

arsi hada

tital Lita

ing

調

15 700

601

200

10

nia.

CHAP. III.

FRIDADADA KARADADA

The ancestors of Peter the Great.

"H E family of Peter the Great have been feated on the throne ever fince the year 1013. Before that time, Ruffia had undergone revolutions, which had retarded the reformation of her police, and the eltablishment of the liberal arts. This has been the fate of all human focieties. No kingdom ever experienced more cruel troubles. In the year 1507, the tyrant Boris Godonow affaffinated Demetrius, the lawful heir, and ulusped the empire. A young monk took the name of Demetrius, pretending to be that prince who had efcaped from his affallins, and with the affiftance of the Poles, and a confiderable party (which every tyrant has against him) he drove out the ufurper, and feized the crown himfelf. The imposture was discovered as foon as he came to the fovereignty, becaufe the people were diffatisfied with his government; and he was neurdered,

74

dered. Three other false Demetrius's role up one after another. Such a fucceffion of impoflors mult needs put a country into the utmost confusion. The lefs men are civilized, the more easily they are imposed on. It may readily be conceived, how much these frauds augmented the public confusion and misfortunes. The Poles, who had begun those revolutions, by setting up the first false Demetrius, were very near being masters of Russia. The Swedes schared in the spoils on the coast of Finland, and also laid claim to the crown. The state feemed on the brink of utter destruction

In the midft of thefe troubles, an affembly, composed of the principal boyars, chose for their forereign a young man only fifteen years of age: this happened in 1613, and did not feem the best method of putting an end to these troubles. This young man was Michael Romanow †, grand-father to Czar Peter, and fon to the archbishop of Rostow, firmamed Philaretes, and of a nun, and related by the mother's fide to the ancient Czars.

IT must be remembered, that this archbishop was a powerful nobleman, whom the tyrant Boris had obliged to become prieft. His wite Scheremetow was likewise forced to take the veil; this was the ancient custom of the western tyrants of the Latin church, as that of putting out the eyes, was with the Greek Christians. The tyrant Demetrius made Philanetes archbishop of Rostow, and fent him ambisflador to Poland, where he was kept prifoner by

+ Some pronounce it Romano.

the

t

F

11

pa , ki

A

W

ne

A

CI of

W

V

in

fi

h

Ca be

len

STR.

CE

egui Dent

蒙

e let

10

rit

bilm

Beri

前世

T

FEI

the Poles, who were then at war with the Ruffians; the law of nations was not known to the different people of thefe times. During his father's confinement, that young Romanow was elected Czar. The archbifhop was exchanged againft fome Polith prifoners; and at his return, his fon raifed him to the patriarchal dignity, and the old man was in reality king under his fon's name.

IF fuch a government appears furprifingly odd to flrangers, the marriages of Czar Michael Romanow will feem fill more fo. The Ruffian princes had never intermarried with foreign flates fince the year 1490, or after they became mafters of Cafan and Aftracan; they feem to have followed the Afiatic cuftoms in almost every thing, and especially that of marrying only among their own fubjects.

THIS conformity to the ancient cuftoms of Afia, was flill more confpicuous in the ceremonies obferved at the marriage of a Czar. All the moft beautiful maidens in the province were fent for to court, where they were received by the grand gouvernance of the court, and provided with apartments in her own houfe, where they all eat together. The Czar vifited them fometimes incognito, and fometimes in his real character. The wedding-day was fixed, without its being known on whom the choice had fallen. At the appointed time, the happy perfon was prefented with a rich wedding fuit, and other rich dreffes were given to the reft of the fair candidates, who then returned home. There have been four inflances of thefe marriages.

AFTER this manner was Michael Romanow e-Vol. I. E fpoufed

fpoufed to Eudocia, the daughter of a poor gentleman, named Strefchneu He was employed in ploughing his grounds with his fervants, when one of the lords of the bed-chamber came to him with prefents from the Czar, and to acquaint him that his daughter was feated on the throne The name of this princefs is ftill held in the higheft effeem by the Ruffians. This cuftom is quite different from ours, but not the lefs to be valued on that account.

8

1

T

F

e

1

I

It is proper to observe, that before Romanow was elected Czar, a ftrong party had made choice of prince Ladiflaus, fon to Sigifmund III king of Poland. At the fame time, the provinces, bordering on Sweden, had offered the crown to a brother of Gustavus Adolphus: fo that Russian was in the fame fituation then in which we have fo frequently feen Poland, where the right of electing a king has been the occasion of civil wars. But the Russians did not follow the example of the Poles, who entered into a compact with the prince whom they elected; notwithstanding they had fussion the oppreffion of tyrants, yet they voluntarily fubmitted to a young man, without making any bargain with him.

Russia never was an elective kingdom; but the male line of their ancient fovereigns failing, and fix Czars, or pretenders, having perifhed miferably in the late troubles, there was, as we have observed, a neceffity for electing a monarch; and this election on occasioned fresh wars with Poland and Sweden, who maintained, with force of arms, their pretended rights to the crown of Russia. The right of governing a nation against its own will, can never

or get

iorei

wheel

i bia

The

tele

ferent

nat att

ini.

a bit

quei

ing

Ria

whis

1121

his

1

出頭

nedit his

,00

1 02

77

be long fupported. The Poles, on their fide, after having advanced as far as Mofcow, and committed great depradations, in which the military expeditions of thofe times chiefly confitted, concluded a truce for fourteen years. By virtue of this truce Poland remained in poffeffion of the duchy of Smolentko, in which the Borifthenes has its fource. The Swedes alfo made peace, in virtue of which they remained in poffeffion of Ingria, and deprived the Ruffians of all communication with the Baltic fea, fo that the empire of Ruffia was feparated more than ever from the reft of Europe.

MICHAEL Romanow, after this peace, reigned quietly, without making any alteration in the flate, either to the improvement or corruption of the administration. After his death, which happened in 1645, his fon Alexis Michaelowitz (or fon of Michael) afcended the throne by hereditary right, at the age of fixteen years. The Czars were always crowned by the patriarch of Ruffia, according to the ceremonies in use at Constantinople, except that the patriarch of Ruffia was feated on the fame feat with the fovereign, and constantly affected an equality highly derogatory to the fupreme power.

ALEXIS MICHAELOWITZ, the fon of Michael.

ALEXIS was married in the fame manner as his father, and from among the young maidens prefented to him, he chofe the one who appeared the most, lovely in his eyes. He matried a daughter of the **E 2** boyar

boyar Meloflauski in 1647; his fecond wife, whom he married in 16 1, was of the family of Nariskin, and his favourite Morofou was married to another. There cannot be a more fuitable title found for this favourite than that of visir, for he governed the empire in a despotic manner, and, by his great power, excited feveral commotions among the Strelitzes, and the populace, as frequently happens at Constantinople.

THE reign of Alexis was diffurbed by bloody infurrections, and by inteffine and foreign wars. A chief of the Don Coffacks, named Stenko-Rafin, endeavoured to make himfelf mafter of Aftracan, and was for a long time very formidable : but he was at length defeated and taken prifoner, and ended his life by the hands of the executioner; like all thofe adventurers, who have nothing to expect but a throne or a fcaffold. About twelve thousand of his adherents are faid to have been hanged, on the high road of Aftracan. In this part of the world, men being uninfluenced by religion, were to be governed only by rigour; and from this feverity, frequently carried to a degree of cruelty, arofe flavery, and a fecret thirft of revenge.

ALEXIS had been at war with the Poles that proved fuccefsful, and terminated in a peace, which fecured to him the poffeffion of Smolenfko, Kiow, and the Ukraine: but he was defeated by the Swedes, and the boundaries of the Ruffian empire were contracted within a very narrow compass on that fide of the kingdom

THE Turks were at that time his most formida-

m

ante

HAR

POR

hay

the

appe

bill

潮

1

1,2

OFF.

制

能加

in:

pate

國言

影

111

10

ble enemies : they invaded Poland, and threatened the dominions of the Czar that bordered upon Crim Tartary, the ancient Taurica Cherfonefus. In 1671, they took the important city of Kaminiek, and all that belonged to Poland in the Ukraine. The Coffacks of that country, ever averfe to jubjection, would not tell whether they belonged to the Turks, Poland, or Ruffia. Sultan Mahomet IV. who had conquered the Poles, and had just impofed a tribute upon them, demanded with all the haughtinels of an Ottoman victor, that the Czar fhould immediately evacuate his poffeffions in the Ukraine; but received as haughty a denial from that prince. Men did not know at that time how to difguife their pride, by an outfide appearance of decency. The fultan, in his letter, filed the fovereign of the Ruffians only Christian Hospodar, and entitled himfelf, " most glorious majesty, king of " the world." The Czar replied in these terms, " that he fcorned to fubmit to a Mahometan dog, " and that his fcimiter was as good as the Grand " Seignior's fabre."

ALEXIS at that time formed a defign which feemed to prefage the influence which the Ruffians would one day obtain in the Christian world. He fent ambaffadors to the Pope, and to almost all the great fovereigns in Europe, excepting France, (which was in alliance with the Turks) in orderto establish a league against the Ottoman Porte. His ambaffadors at the court of Rome had no other fuccels but in not being obliged to kils the Pope's toe; and in other courts they met only with good wilhes,

E 3

wifhes, the quarrels of the Christian princes between themfelves, and the jarring interests arifing from those quarrels, being generally prevented from uniting against the common enemy of Christianity.

In the mean time, the Turks threatened to chaflife the Poles for refufing to pay their tribute : Czar Alexis affisted on the fide of Crim Tartary, and John Sobiefky, general of the crown, wiped off his country's flain, by a fignal victory over the Turks, at the famous battle of Choczim in 1074, which paved his way to the throne. Alexis disputed this very throne with him, and offered to unite his extensive dominions to Poland, as the Jagellons had done; but in regard to Lithuania, the greatness of his offer was the caufe of its being rejected. He is faid to have been very deferving of the new kingdom, by the manner in which he governed his own fubjects. Alexis was the first who caused a body of laws to be digefted in Ruffia, though imperfect; he introduced both linen and filk manufactures, which indeed were not long continued; yet he had the merit of their first establishment. He peopled the deferts about the Wolga and the Kama, with Lithuanian, Polish and Tartarian families, whom he had taken prifoners in his wars : before his reign, all prifoners of war were the flaves of those to whole lot they fell. Alexis employed them in agriculture: he did his utmost endeavours to introduce discipline among those troops : in a word, he was worthy of being the father of Peter the Great; but he had no time to perfect what he had begun,

gun, being fnatched away by a fudden death, at the age of forty fix, in the beginning of the year 1677, according to our ftile, which is eleven days forwarder than that of Ruffia.

elts ?

press

enem

ute :(

and) his a

Tah

Witt

h

s ente

bad b

of

Hei

阿山

200

erfelt

的机

e tal i

xpiel!

12

while .

的彩

201

ntret her

eatil

FOEDOR, or THEODORE ALEXIOWITZ.

UPON the death of Alexis, fon of Michael, all relapfed into confusion. He left by his first marriage two princes, and two princess. Theodore, the eldest, ascended the throne at fisteen years of age §. He was a prince of a weak and fickly conflication, but of merit superior to his bodily infirmities. His father Alexis had caused him to be acknowledged his successfor, a year before his death: a conduct observed by the kings of France from Hugh-Capet down to Lewis the Young, and by many other sources.

THE fecond fon of Alexis was Iwan or John, who was ftill worfe treated by nature than his brother Theodore, being almost blind and dumb, veryinfirm, and frequently troubled with convulsions. Of fix daughters, born of this first marriage, the only one who made any figure in Europe was the princess Sophia, who was remarkable for her great talents; but unhappily still more for the mischief schedengned against Peter the Great.

ALEXIS, by his fecond marriage with another of his fubjects, daughter of the boyar Nariskin, had

> § 1677. E 4

Peter,

Peter, and the princess Nathalia. Peter was born on the thirtieth of May (or the tenth of June, new flile) in 1672; and was but four years old when he lost his father. As the children of a fecond marriage were not much regarded in Russia, it was little expected that he would ever mount the throne.

t

h

IT had ever been the fludy of the family of Romanow to civilize the empire. It was also that of Theodore. We have already remarked in speaking of Mofcow, that this prince encouraged the inhabitants of that city to build a great number of flone houfes. He likewife greatly enlarged that capital, and made feveral ufeful regulations in the general nolice; but by endeavouring to reform the boyars, he made them all his enemies : befides, he wanted fufficient knowledge, vigour, and refolution, to venture upon making a general reformation. The war with the Turks, or rather with the Crim Tartars, in which he was conftantly engaged with alternate fuccefs, would not permit a prince of his weak flate of health to undertake fo great a work. Theodore, like the reft of his predeceffors, married one of his own fubjects, a native of the frontiers of Poland; but having loft her in lefs than a year after their nuptials, he took for his fecond wife, in 1682, Martha Matweowna, daughter of fecretary Apraxin. Some months after this marriage, he was feized with the diftemper which ended his days, and died without leaving any iffue. As the Czars married without regard to birth, they might likewife (at leaft at that time) appoint a fucceffor without respect to primogeniture. The dignity of confort

fort and heir to the fovereign feemed to be entirely the reward of merit; and in that respect, the custom of this empire was much superior to those of more civilized nations.

as bu

ne, m

a lett

2, 111

ethn

feet

dh

at copi

ie ges

it but

10 10

B, 11%

The

artas

razeli

reak to

In

miela

rs ab

間前

insil

\$217

ten .

is th

of cu

THEODORE, before he expired, fenfible that his brother Iwan was by his natural infirmities incapable of governing, appointed his brother Peter heir to the empire, who being then in his tenth year, had given early proofs of a fine genius.

IF, on the one hand, the cuftom of raifing a fubject to the rank of Czarina, was favourable to the females, there was another which was no lefs hard upon them, namely, that the daughters of the Czars were very feldom married, but fpent their lives in a monaftery.

THE prince's Sophia, third daughter of Czar Alexis, by his first marriage, had abilities, equally great and dangerous. Perceiving that her brother Theodore had not long to live, she did not retire to a convent; but finding herfelf likely to be left between two brothers, one of whom was incapable of governing, through his natural inability, and the other, on account of his infancy, she formed a defign of placing herfelf at the head of the empire. Hence, in the last hours of the Czar Theodore, she attempted to act the part that Pulcheria had formerly played with her brother, the emperor Theodofius.

E.5

CHAP,

。约以及这次定定这些深意派定在这次定法。

CHAP. IV.

JOHN and PETER.

Horrible sedition among the Strelitzes *.

HEODORE was fearcely dead ‡, when the nomination of a prince of ten years old to the throne, the exclusion of the elder brother, and the intrigues of the princefs Sophia, their fifter, excited a most bloody revolt amongst the Strelitzes. Never did the Janizaries, nor the Prætorian guards, exercife more horrible cruelties. The infurrection began two days after the burial of Theodore, when they all ran to arms in the Cremelin, which is the Czar's palace at Molcow. They began with accufing nine of their colonels, for keeping back their pay. The ministry was obliged to break the colonels, and to pay the Strelitzes the money they demanded : but this did not fatisfy them ; they infifted upon having these nine officers delivered up to them, and condemned them by a majority of votes, to fuffer the Battogs or Knowt ; which punifiment was inflicted in this manner.

* Extracted wholly from the memoirs fent from Mofcow and Petersburg. \$ 1682.

THE criminal is firipped naked, and laid flat on his belly, while two executioners beat over the back with fwitches, till the judge, who flands by to fee the fentence put in execution, fays, " He has got enough." The colonels, after being thus treated by their men, were obliged to return them thanks, according to the cuftom of the eaftern nations; where eriminals, after undergoing their punifhment, muft kifs the judge's hand. Befides complying with this cuftom, the officers gave them a fum of money, which was fomething more than the cuftom.

前

El I

R.I

K

臣

1

WHILE the Strelitzes thus began to make themfelves formidable, the prince's Sophia, who privately encouraged them, in order to lead them by degrees from crime to crime, held an affembly at her house, confisting of the princeffes of the blood, the generals of the army, the boyars, the patriarch, the bishops, and even some of the principal merchants ; the represented to them, that prince John, by right of birth and merit, was entitled to the empire, the reins of which the intended to keep in her own hands. At the breaking up of the affembly, the caufed a promife to be made to the Strelitzes, of an addition of pay, befides feveral confiderable prefents. Her emiffaries were employed to ftir up the foldiery against the Nariskin family, particularly the two brothers of the young dowager Czarina, the mother of Peter the First. These persuaded the Strelitzes, that one of the brothers, named John, had put on the imperial robes, had feated himfelf on the throne, and had attempted to ftrangle prince John ; adding, moreover, that the late Czar Theodore had been E 6 poifoned

t

1

t

11

poisoned by Daniel Vongad, a Dutch physician. Afterwards Sophia put into their hands a lift of forty noblemen, whom the ftiled enemies to their corps, and to the flate, and as fuch worthy of death. These proceedings exactly resembled the proferiptions of Sylla, and the Roman triumvirate, which Chriftiern II. revived in Denmark and Sweden. This fhews that fuch cruelties prevail in all countries in times of anarchy and confusion. The mutineers began the tragedy with throwing the two knezes, Dolgorouki and Matheof, out of the palacewindows; whom the Strelitzes received upon the points of their pikes; then ftripped them naked, and dragged their dead bodies into the great fquare; they then rushed into the palace, where meeting with Athanafius Narifkin, a brother of the young Czarina, and one of the uncles of Czar Peter, they murdered him in the fame manner ; then breaking open the door of the neighbouring church, where three of the proferibed perfons had taken refuge, they drag them from the altar, flrip them naked, and cut them in pieces with knives.

THEIR fury was arrived to fuch a pitch, that feeing a young nobleman of the family of Soltikoff, a great favourite of theirs, and who was not included in the lift of the proferibed, and fome of them miftaking him for John Nariskin, whom they were in fearch of, they murdered him upon the fpot; and what plainly thews the manners of those times, after having discovered their error, they carried the body of the young noble to his father to bury it; and the wretched parent, not daring to complain, gave

17mi

101

old

pin

te, n

Sr

Te

ış ür

then

102

Dait

n in

11 11

物制

Peter

1 10

CA R

团质

pict, 1

SE

蹲

87

gave them a confiderable reward for bringing him the mangled body of his fon. Being upbraided by his wife, his daughters, and the lady of the deceafed, for his weaknefs, "Let us wait an opportunity of being revenged," faid the old man. Thefe words being overheard by iome of the foldiers, they returned farioufly back into the room, dragged the aged parent by the hair, and cut his throat at his own door.

ANOTHER party of the Strelitzes, who were in fearch of the Dutch phyfician Vongad, met with his fon, of whom they enquired for his father; the youth trembling, replied, he did not know where he was; upon which they immediately killed him. Soon after a German phyfician falling in their way, "You are a doctor, faid they, and if you did not poifon our mafter Theodore, you have poifoned others, and therefore merit death," and thereupon they difpatched him.

Ar length they found the Dutchman, of whom they were in queft, difguifed in the habit of a beggar; they initantly drag him before the palace: the princeffes who loved this worthy man, and placed great confidence in his fkill, begged the Strelitzes to fpare him, affuring them that he was a very good phyfician, and had taken all poffible care of their brother Theodore. The Strelitzes made anfwer, that he not only deferved to die as a phyfician, but alfo as a forcerer; and that they had found in his cabinet a great dried toad, and the fkin of a ferpent. They alfo required to have young Narifkin delivered up to them, whom they had fearched

fearched for in vain for two days; infifting, that he was certainly in the palace, and that they would fet fire to it, unless he was put into their hands. The fifter of John Nariskin, and the other princeffes, terrified by their menaces, went to acquaint their unhappy brother with what had paffed : upon which the patriarch heard his confession, adminifters the viaticum and extreme unction to him, and then taking an image of the bleffed virgin which was faid to perform miracles, he leads the young man forth by the hand, and prefents him to the Strelitzes, prefenting to them, at the fame time, the image of the virgin. The princeffes, diffoly. ed in tears, furrounded Nariskin, and falling upon their knees before the foldiers, befought them, in the name of the bleffed virgin, to fpare their relation's life; but the inhuman wretches tore him from their arms, and dragged him to the foot of the flairs, together with the phyfician Vongad, where they held a kind of tribunal amongst themfelves, and condemned them both to be put to the torture. One of the foldiers, who could write, drew up a form of indictment, and fentenced the two unfortunates to be cut in pieces; a punifhment inflicted in China and Tartary on parricides, and called the punishment of ten thousand flices. After having thus used Nariskin and Vongad, they expofed their heads, feet and hands, on the iron points of a ballustrade.

WHILE this party of the Strelitzes were thus glutting their revenge in the fight of the princeffes, the reft maffacred every one who was obnoxious

noxious to them, or fuspected by the princes Sophia.

ng

印前

thery

fed :

igni the t

hia :

fant

ilin,

e the

nticii 10 Fiz

onghi e pull

ooli r nenet paalla icida,

1

NOF

W.C.

稻

025

THIS horrid tragedy concluded with proclaiming the two princes, John and Peter, in June 1682, joint fovereigns, and affociating their fifter Sophia with them in the government, in the quality of co-regent; who then publickly approved of all their outrages, conferred upon them rewards, confifcated the effates of the proferibed, and beftowed them upon their murderers. She gave them permiftion to erect a monument, with the names of the perfons they had maffacred, as being traitors to their country: and to crown all, the publified letters patent, thanking them for their zeal and fidelity.

CHAP. V.

ADMINISRATION OF THE PRINCESS SOPHIA.

Extraordinary quarrel about religion. A con-Spiracy t.

HESE were the fteps by which the princess Sophia did afcend the throne of Ruffia, with-

+ Extracted intirely from the memoirs communicated by the court of Petersburg.

90

out being declared Czarina; and these the examples that PETER the FIRST had before his eyes. Sophia enjoyed all the honours of a fovereign; her buft was on the coin; the figned all difpatches, held the chief place in council, and a fupreme power without controul. She was possible of a great deal of wit, made verses in her own language, and both wrote and spoke extremely well. An agreeable person fet off these talents, which her ambition alone fullied.

SHE procured a wife for her brother John, in the manner already fhewn in feveral examples. A young lady, named Soltikoff, of the family with the noblemen of that name who had been murdered by the feditious Strelitzes, was chofen out of the heart of Siberia, where her father commanded a fortrefs, to be prefented to Czar John at Mofcow. Her beauty triumphed over all the intrigues of her rivals, and John was married to her in 1084. At every marriage of a Czar, we feem to read the hiflory of Ahafuerus, or that of a fecond Theodofus.

In the midft of the marriage feafts, the Strelitzes raifed a new infurrection, (and who would believe it?) on account of religion! of a particular doctrine! If they had been mere foldiers, they would never have become controvertifts, but they were citizens of Moscow. Whoever can harangue the populace in an authoritative manner, may found a fect. This has been feen in all ages, and all parts of the world, especially fince the passion of dogmatifing has become the influment of ambition and the means of inflaving weak minds.

RUSSIA

29

m

(5

S

Xam

5. 5

ga; j

ilpat

emer of ap

ULARE I

油

mpla. familji

ta m

in outs

man

21 M

gust

104

read the

Thexis

, the

who fi

fami

ldiss !

加利加

5, 20

pulit

amit

91

Russia had already experienced fome feditions upon a difpute, whether the fign of the crofs was to be made with three fingers, or with two? One Abakum, a prieft, had fet up fome new doctrines at Molcow, about the holy Ghoft ; which, according to the fcriptures, enlightened all the faithful; as likewife with respect to the equality of the primitive Chriftians, and these words of Chrift, " There shall be amongst you neither first nor last." Several citizens, and many of the Strelitzes, embraced the opinions of Abakum. One Rafpop was the chief of this party, which became confiderable. Those enthusiasts, at length, entered the cathedral, July 16 N. S. 1682. where the patriarch and his clergy were officiating; drove them out of the church with stones, and feated themselves very devoutly in their places, to receive the holy Ghoft. They called the patriarch the "wolf in theep's cloathing;" a title which all fects have liberally bestowed upon each other. The princess Sophia, and the two Czars, were immediately made acquainted with these disturbances; and the other Strelitzes, who were faunch to the good old caufe, were given to understand, that the Czars and the church were in danger. Upon this the Strelitzes and the patriarchal burghers attacked the Abakumilts; but a flop was put to the carnage, by publishing a convocation of a council, which was immediately affembled in a hall of the palace. This took up very little time, for they obliged every prieft they met to attend. The patriarch, and a bishop, difputed against Raspop; but at the second fyllogism, they

they began to throw flones at one another. The council ended with ordering Rafpop to be beheaded, and fome of his faithful difciples to be put to death; and this fentence was executed by the order of the three fovereigns, Sophia, John and Peter.

DURING these troubles, there was a knez, named Chowanskoi, who, having been instrumental in raising the princes Sophia to the dignity she then held, expected, as a reward for his fervices, to have a share in the administration. He found Sophia not so grateful as he could wish; upon which he espoused the cause of religion, and the perfecuted Raspopians, and stirred up a party among the Strelitzes and the people, in defence of the cause of God.

THIS confpiracy was of a more ferious nature than the enthusiastic riot of Raspop. An ambitious hypocrite always carries things farther than a fimple fanatic. Chowanskoi aimed at no less than the imperial dignity; and to remove all obstacles in his way, he refolved to murder the two Czars, Sophia, the other princeffes, and every one who was attached to the imperial family. The Czars and the princeffes were obliged to retire to the monattery of the Holy Trinity, within twelve leagues of Molcow. This was, at the fame time, a convent, a palace, and a fortrefs, like mount Caffino, Corby, Fulda, Kempten, and feveral others belonging to the Latin church. This monastery of the Trinity belongs to the monks of St. Bafil. It is furrounded by deep ditches, and ramparts of brick, on which is planted a numerous artillery. The monks

er. 1

Dê be

ben

bre

ioundi

ion sti

ie pek

ongit

thea

Ast

arthe

自然

ila.

e mi

町郎

The

ittaa

REAL

int, 1

nen G

herito

324

en

monks are possefield of all the country round for four leagues. The imperial family were in full fafety there, but more on account of the strength, than the fanctity of the place. Here Sophia treated with the rebel knez; and having decoyed him to come half way, caufed his head to be struck off, together with those of one of his fons, and thirty feven Strelitzes who accompanied him *.

UPON this being made known, the body of the Strelitzes fly to arms, and march to attack the convent of the Trinity, threatening to deftroy every thing that come in their way. The imperial family flood upon their defence ; the boyars arm their vaffals, all the gentlemen flock into the convent, and a bloody civil war feemed on the point of breaking out. The patriarch fomewhat pacified the Strelitzes, who began to be frightened with the number of troops that were marching to furround them on all fides; in fhort, their fury was changed into fear, and their fear into the most abject submiffion ; a change common to the mob. Three thousand feven hundred of this corps, followed by their wives and children, with halters about their necks, went in procession to the convent of the Trinity, which three days before they had threatened to burn. In this condition, thefe unhappy wretches prefent themfelves before the gate of the convent, two by two, one carrying a block, and another an ax; and proftrating themfelves on the ground, waited for their fentence. They were pardoned upon their

1682.

fubmiffion

6

C

CO

193

DI

Ca

t

af

ł

2

0

fubmiffion, and returned back to Mofcow, bleffing their fovereigns; and ftill difpofed, though unknown to themfelves, to commit the fame crime upon the very first opportunity.

THESE commotions being fublided, the flate refumed an exterior of tranquillity ; but Sophia fill remained poffeffed of the chief authority, leaving John to his incapacity, and keeping Peter in tutelage. In order to ftrengthen her power, fhe fhared it with prince Bafil Galitzin, whom the raifed to be generalistimo, minister of state, and lord-keeper. Galitzin was in every refpect fuperior to any other perfon in that diffracted court : he was polite, magnificent, full of great defigns, more learned than any of his countrymen, having received a much better education, and was even master of the Latin tongue, which was, at that time, almost entirely unknown in Ruffia. He was of an active and indefatigable spirit, had a genius superior to the times he lived in, and capable, had he had leifure and power, as he had the inclination, of reforming the manners in Ruffia. This is the character given of him by La Neuville, at that time the Polifh envoy in Ruffia; and the encomiums of foreigners are feldom to be fuspected.

THIS minister bridled the infolence of the Strelitzes, by distributing the most mutinous of that body among the feveral regiments in the Ukraine, in Cafan, and Siberia. It was under his administration, that the Poles, long the rivals of Russia, gave up, in 1686, all pretensions to the large provinces of Smolensko and the Ukraine. He was the frict

Hi

Ng.

110

th

T

pola

an a

調

16

95

first who fent an embaffy to France, in 1687; a country, which had for upwards of twenty years been in the zenith of its glory, by its numerous conquests, new establishments, and the magnificence of Lewis XIV. and especially by the improvement of the fine arts, without which there can be only external grandeur, but no folid glory. France had not then entered into any corresponteri dence with Ruffia, or rather was unacquainted with ,6 that empire; the academy of infcriptions ordered a medal to be ftruck to commemorate this embaffy, as if it had come from the most distant part of the Indies; but notwithstanding all this, the ambaffador Dolgoroufki miscarried in his negotiation. (TEL and even fuffered fome grofs affronts on account ies : of the ill conduct of his domeflics, whofe miftakes it would have been better to have overlooked; but the court of Lewis XIV. could not then forefee, that France and Ruffia would one day reckon it an advantage to be cemented by a clofe alliance. 后

Russia was now quiet at home, but the was ftill pent up on the fide of Sweden, though enlarged towards Poland, her new ally, in continual alarms on the fide of Crim Fartary, and at variance with China in regard to the frontiers.

THE greatest grievance the empire laboured under was, that it had not yet attained to a vigorous and regular administration, that the Khan of the Crim Tartars exacted an annual tribute of fixty thoufand rubles, in the nature of that which the Turks had laid on Poland.

CRIM Tartary is the ancient Taurica Cherfonefus.

6

nefus, formerly fo famous by the commerce of the Greeks, and fill more by their fables, a fruitful but barbarous country. It took its name of Crimea or Crim, from the title of its first Khans, who took this name before the conquests of the fons of Gengis-Khan. To free the country from this yoke, and wipe off the difgrace of fuch a tribute, the prime minister, Galitzin, marched in person into Crim Tartary at the head of a numerous army +. These armies are not to be compared to the present troops; they had no discipline; there was hardly one regiment completely armed; they had no uniform cloathing, no regularity : their men indeed were inured to hard labour and a fcarcity of provifions, but then they carried with them fuch a prodigious quantity of baggage, as far exceeded any thing of the kind in our camps, where the greatest luxury prevails. Their vast numbers of waggons for carrying ammunition and provisions, in an uninhabitable and defart country, greatly retarded the expedition against Crim Tartary. The army found itself in the midst of the vast defarts on the river Samara, unprovided with magazines. Here Galitzin did, what, in my opinion, was never done any where elfe : he employed thirty thousand men in building a town on the banks of the Samara, to ferve as a place for magazines in the enfuing campaign : it was begun in one year, and finished in the third month of the following ; the houles indeed were all of wood except two, which were

+ 1687, 1688.

brick;

b

٦

p hi

2

I

t

t

brick; the ramparts were of turf, but well lined with artillery; and the whole place was in a good flate of defence.

illi,

32

Väi

hait

DEAL

tyal) fudi icel:

山

ni.

ilin,

加

16

Sant

int

int

THIS was all that was done of any confequence in this ruinous expedition. In the mean while, Sophia continued to govern in Mofcow, while John had only the name of Czar; and Peter, now at the age of feventeen, had the courage to aim at real fovereignty. La Neuville, the Polish envoy, then refident at Mofcow, and who was eye witnefs to all that paffed, pretends that Sophia and Galitzin had engaged the new chief of the Strelitzes, to facrifice the young Czar to their ambition; it appears, at leaft, that fix hundred of the Strelitzes were to have made themselves masters of his perfon. The private memoirs, which have been intrufted to my perutal, by the court of Ruffia, affirm, that a fcene had actually been laid to murder Peter the First : the blow was on the point of being ftruck, and Ruffia near being deprived of a prince by whom the had been raifed into existence. The Czar was once more obliged to take refuge in the convent of the Trinity, the ufual alylum of the court when threatened by the mutinous foldiers. There he affembled the boyars of his party, raifed a body of forces, treats with the captain of the Strelitzes, and fends for fome Germans, who had been long fettled in Molcow, and were all attached to his perfon, from his having already thewn himfelf the encourager of foreigners. Sophia and John continued at Molcow, and uled every art to engage the Strelitzes to remain firm to their interests; but the caule

98

caufe of young Peter, who loudly complained of an attempt meditated against himself and his mother, prevailed over that of the princefs, and of a Czar, whofe very looks caufed contempt. All the accomplices were punished with a feverity to which that country was as much accustomed, as to the crimes which occasioned it. Some were beheaded, after undergoing the punifhment of the knout or battocks. The chief of the Strelitzes was put to death in the fame manner, and feveral other fuspected perlons had their tongues cut out. Prince Galitzin escaped with his life, through the intercession of one of his relations, who was a favourite of Czar Peter ; but he was ftripped of his eftates, which were immense, and banished to a place in the neighbourhood of Archangel. La Neuville, who was prefent at the whole of this cataftrophe, relates, that the fentence pronounced upon Galitzin, was in these terms. " Thou art commanded, by the moft merciful Czar, to repair to Karga, a town under the Pole, and there to continue the remainder of thy days. His majefty, out of his extreme goodnefs, allows thee three pence per day for thy fubfiftence."

I HERE is no town under the Pole. Karga is in the fixty fecond degree of latitude, and only fix degrees and a half further north than Mofcow. Whoever pronounced this fentence, must have been a very bad geographer. La Neuville was probably imposed upon by a falle account.

t THIS scene was finished by fending the prin-\$ 1089.

cels

6

P

cefs Sophia back to her monaftery at Mofcow, after having fo long held the reins of government; and this revolution proved, to a woman of her difpolition, a fufficient punifhment.

211

atel

Diet is Diet tai

inti

inten Linten

ates, i Nace i

pbe, d

aline .

ted, h

120

Li

副加加加

hatt

s pri

前

VOL. I.

FROM this inflant Peter began to reign in reality; his brother John having no other fhare in the government, but that of lending his name to all public acts. He led a retired life, and died in 1696.

CHAP. VI.

THE REIGN OF PETER THE FIRST.

Beginning of the Grand Reformation.

PETER the Great was tall and well-made, had a noble countenance, lively eyes, and a robuft conflitution, fitted for all labour and exercifes. He had a found underftanding, which is the foundation of all real talents; and to this folidity was joined an active difpolition, which prompted him to undertake and do great things. His education was far from being worthy of his genius. The princefs Sophia's defign was that he fhould remain in ignorance, and to indulge himfelf in thofe exceffes which youth, idlenefs, cuftom, and his high rank made allowable. Neverthelefs, he had been lately married \dagger , like others of his predeceffors, to one of his own fubjects, the daughter of colonel Lapuchin; but being young, and for fome

> † In June 1689. F

time

time had not enjoyed any of the prerogatives of the crown, but that of indulging his pleafures without refiraint, the ties of wedlock were not always fufficient to keep him within juft bounds. His feafing and caroufals with foreigners who had been invited to Mofcow by prince Galitzin, feemed not to promife that he would one day become the reformer of his country; however, in fpite of bad example, and even the allurements of pleafures, he applied himfelf to the arts of war and government, and which even then fhewed that he had fome feeds of greatnefs.

IT was fill lefs expected, that a prince, who was fubject by his conditution to fuch a dread of water as to fubject him to cold fweats, and even to convultions, when he was obliged to crofs a fmall river, fhould become one of the beft feamen in all the north. In order to get the better of nature, he began by jumping into the water, till at length this averfion was changed into a fondnefs for that element.

HE was aftiamed at the ignorance in which he had been brought up He learned, almost of himfelf, without the help of a matter, enough of High and Low Dutch, to be able to write and speak tolerably well in both these languages. The Germans and Dutch he thought the most civilized nations, because the former had already erected in Moscow some of those arts and manufactures which he was defirous of feeing eff blished in his empire; and the latter excelled in the art of navigation, which he already faw was the most necessary of all others.

龍

昭初

neh "

nali

SUCH were the dispositions that were in Peter, notwithstanding the follies of his youth. At the fame time, his fituation was hazardous, being obliged to guard against factions at home, had the turbulent spirit of the Strelitzes to keep under, and an almost uninterrupted war to manage against the Crim Tartars. For though hostilities had been sufpended in 1689 by a truce, it had no long continuance.

LURING this interval, Peter became confirmed in his defign of introducing the liberal arts into his country.

His father Alexis had, in his life-time, the fame views, but he wanted a favourable opportunity to carry them into execution. He transmitted his genius to his fon, who had fill a clearer idea of these matters than himfelf, was more vigorous, and more unshaken by difficulties and obftacles.

ALEXIS had been at a great expence in fending for Bothler *, a fhip-builder and fea-captain from Holland, with a number of carpenters and failors. Thefe built a large frigate and a yacht upon the Wolga, which they navigated down that river to Aftracan, where they were to be employed in building more veffels, for carrying on an advantageous trade with Perfia by the Cafpian fea Juft at this time the revolt of Stenka Rafin broke out; and this rebel deftroyed thefe two veffels, which he ought to have preferved for his own fake, and murdered the captains. The reft of the crew fled into Perfia, from whence they got to fome fettlements be-* Memoirs of Petersburg and Mofcow.

F 2

longing

longing to the Dutch Eaft-India company. A mafler-builder, who was a good fhip-wright, flaid behind in Ruffia, where he lived a long time in obfcurity.

ing

tiers

one

ed b

25 to

OB,

gel,

you

28 II

this

fata

1

Pie

Ge

ab

be

de

bee

gr

W

E

ONE day, as Peter was walking at Ifhmaelof, a fummer-palace built by his grand-father, he perceived, among feveral other rarities, an old Englifh fhallop, which had been entirely neglected: upon which he afked Timmerman, a German, and his mathematical teacher, how came that little boat to be of fo different a conftruction from any he had icen on the Molka? Timmerman replied, that it was made to go with fails and oars. The young prince wanted inflantly to make a trial of it; but it was first to be repaired and rigged. Brant, the fhip builder above mentioned, was at laft found at Mofcow, where he lived retired; he foon put the boat in order, and failed with her upon the river Yauza, which washes the fuburbs of the town.

PETER caufed his boat to be removed to a great lake in the neighbourhood of the convent of the. Trinity, where he made Brant build two more frigates, and three yachts, and piloted them himfelf. A confiderable time afterwards, viz in 1094, he took a journey to Archangel, and having ordered Brant to build a fmall veffel, he embarked therein on the Frezen ocean, which no fovereign befide himtelf had ever beheld. On this occafion he was effected by a Dutch man of war, under the command of Captain Johon, and attended by all the nerchant veffels then in the harbour of Archangel. He had already learned the manner of working

ing a fhip; and notwithstanding the pains his courtiers took to imitate their master, he was the only one who understood it.

He found it as difficult to raife a well difciplined body of land forces on whom he could depend, as to eflablish a navy. His first effay in navigation, on a lake, previous to his journey to Archangel, was looked upon only as the amufement of a young prince of genius; and his first attempt to form a body of difciplined troops, likewife appeared as no more than that of diversion. This happened during the regency of the princes Sophia; and had he been suffected of meaning any thing elfe, by this amufement, it might have been attended with fatal confequences to the young hero.

HE placed his confidence in a foreigner, the celebrated Le Fort, of a noble and ancient family in Piedmont, who removed near two centuries ago to Geneva, where they have filled the most confiderable posts in the state. He was intended to have been brought up to trade, to which that city is indebted for its prefent importance, having formerly been remarkable only for religious controverses.

BUT his genius, which prompted him to the greateft undertakings, engaged him to quit his father's houfe at the age of fourteen; and he ferved four years in quality of a cadet in the citadel of Marfeilles; from thence he went to Holland, where he ferved fome time as a volunteer, and was wounded at the fiege of Grave, a fortified town on the Meufe, which the prince of Orange, afterwards king of England, retook from Lewis XIV. in 1694. Af-

F 3

ter

103

. An t, fkid) ime in

hmael

ner, bez an old r neght Gerthau 南湖省 plied, th Then , Brz e fóxa pr op:a tki them ived 1011 two thir ín (4) 前原常 ereigo L er the

of dist

ter din

ed

gere

polli

It

ter

28

Pi

de

01

ter this, led by hopes of preferment, wherever he could find it, he embarked with a German colonel, named Verstin, who had obtained a commiffion from Peter's father, the Czar Alexis, to raife foldiers in the Netherlands, and bring them to Archangel. But when he arrived at that port, after a most fatiguing and dangerous navigation, the Czar Alexis was dead ; the government was changed, and Mufcovy in confusion. The governor of Archangel fuffered Verstin, Le Fort, and his whole troop, to remain a long time in the utmost poverty and diffrefs, and even threatened to fend them into the extremity of Siberia; upon which every man shifted for himself. Le Fort, in great necesfity, repaired to Mofcow, where he waited upon the Danish refident, named de Horn, who made him his fecretary : there he learned the Ruffian language, and fome time afterwards found means to be introduced to the Czar Peter ; the elder brother Iwan not being a person for his purpose. Peter was taken with him, and immediately made him a captain of foot. Le Fort did not understand much of the military fervice, he was unlearned, not having fludied any particular art or science; but he had feen a great deal, and was capable of making the most of what he faw. Like the Czar, he owed every thing to his own genius; he underflood the German and Dutch languages, which Peter was learning at that time. Every thing confpired to make him agreeable to Peter, to whom he ftrictly attached himfelf. From being the companion of his pleafures, he became his favourite, and confirm. ed

herever

i man o

1 2 0000

XIS, IOI

ing the

that pot

avigation

nt was the

e goten and hist

le utmit.

which a

n great u

waited a

n, who a

e Rofa

ind mea

elderhu

rpole, h

y made tie

erstande

ned, not s

nce; ht

e of mai

car, he m

deritool

Peter I

onfoirel

he this

p panim

d coom

ed himfelf in that station by his good qualities. The Czar made him his confident in the moft dan. gerous delign that a prince of that country could poffibly form, namely, that of putting himfelf in a condition to be able one day to break the feditious and barbarous body of forces called the Strelitzes. It had cost the great Sultan Ofman his life for attempting to reform the Janizaries. Peter, young as he was, went to work in a much abler manner than Olman.

HE began with forming, at his country-feat at Preobrazinski, a company of fifty of his youngest domeftics; and fome young gentlemen, the fons of boyars, were chosen for their officers : but in order to teach them fubordination, to which they were wholly unaccuftomed, he made them pais through all the different military degrees, and himfelf let them the example, by ferving first as a drummer, then as a private foldier, a ferjeant, and a lieutenant of a company. Nothing was ever more uleful than this conduct. The Ruffians had hitherto made war after the manner of our anceftors at the time of the feudal tenures, when the nobles took the field at the head of their vaffals, undifciplined, and ill armed : a barbarous method, sufficient indeed to act against the like armies, but of no use against regular troops.

THIS company, which was raifed wholly by Peter himfelf, foon increased in numbers, and became afterwards the regiment of Preobrazinski guards. Another regiment, formed on the fame

F4

plan,

IOS

plan, became in time the regiment of Semeniousky guards.

THE Czar now had a regiment of five thousand foot that could be depended upon, trained by general Gordon, a Scotsman, and composed almost entirely of foreigners. Le Fort, who had seen very little real fervice, but whose capacity was equal to every thing, undertook to raise a regiment of twelve thousand men, which he performed: five colonels were appointed to ferve under him, and he faw himself on a fudden general of this little army, which had been raised, as much to oppose the Strelitzes, as the enemies of the state.

ONE thing worthy of being obferved *, and which fully confutes that error of those who pretend, that France lost very few of its inhabitants by the revocation of the edict of Nantz, is, that one third of this army, which was only called a regiment, confisted of French refugees. Le Fort difciplined his new troops, as if he had been a foldier all his lifetime.

PETER was defirous of feeing one of those mock. fights, which had been lately introduced in times of peace: a fort was erected, which was to be attacked by one part of his new troops, and defended by the other. The difference between this fight and others of the like nature, was, that instead of a sham engagement, this was a real one, in which fome of his men were flain, and a great many wounded. Le Fort, who commanded the attack.

* General Le Fort's MSS.

received

recei

were

ferm

bour

T

Czar

Fort

neve

kner

gene

men

B

in th

who,

a mu

exat

har

ł

fore

of

vei

Cr

bee

received a confiderable wound. Thefe bloody fports were intended to initiate the young troops into the fervice of the field; but it required both much labour and trouble.

THESE warlike amufements did not take off the Czar from his naval project. As he had made Le Fort a general by land, notwithftanding his having never commanded, he now made him admiral, tho' he had never had the direction of a fhip, but he knew him deferving both of the che and the other. It is true, he was an admiral without a fleet, and a general with no other troops but his own regiment.

By degrees the Czar reformed that great abufe in the army, viz. the independance of the boyars, who, in time of war, ufed to take the field with a multitude of their vaffals and peafants: this was exactly the ancient government of the Franks, Huns, Goths, and Vandals, who indeed fubdued the Roman empire in its flate of decline, but would have been eafily deftroyed, had they had the difciplined legions of ancient Rome to encounter, or fuch armies as are now brought into the field.

ADMIRAL Le Fort was not long, however, before he had fomething more than an empty title. He employed fome Dutchmen and Venetians in building a number of long-boats, and alfo two fhips of about thirty guns each, at the mouth of the Woronitz, which falls into the Tanais, or Don : thefe veffels were to fall down the river, and keep the Crim Tartars in awe, with whom hostilities had been renewed.

recein

THE

eginer

it bamit

t bia. 1

lte,

rved t, 1

le who r

inhitis

TZ BI

called

Le Paris

tholens

ed in th

as to bu

nd dela

in this

nfteada

in wi

eat mi

he attai

F 5

THE

108

THE Czar was now to determine in 1680, 2against which of the following powers he would declare war, whether against the Turks, the Swedes. or the Chinefe. But here it will be proper to take notice on what terms he then flood with China. which was the first treaty of peace concluded by that nation.

12 was and and rank rank rank and rate and the said rank while and back and back

CHAP. VII.

Congress and treaty with the Chinese *.

E must first shew what were the limits of the Chinefe and Ruffian empires at this period. After paffing through Siberia, properly fo called, and leaving far behind us to the fouth, an hundred hords of Tartars, white and black Calmucks, and Mahometan and Pagan Moguls, we advance to the hundred and thirtieth degree of longitude, and the fifty fecond of latitude, upon the river Amur. To the northward is a great chain of mountains, which extend as far as the Frozen Sea, beyond the polar circle. This river, which runs the space of five hundred leagues in Siberia and Chinese Tartary, loses itself after various turn. ings in the fea of Kamtshatka. It is affirmed, that

* Extracted from memoirs fent from China; alfo from thole of Petersburg, and from letters published in Du Halde's history of China.

at

20 11

2 m

tamt hardt

tende

com Sibe

it ar mol

We mer phar

the

the I

of

Ru

em

Vel

gri

the

em

20

to

ba

in

bi

no en

109

Aill

at its mouth, in this fea, there is fometimes caught a monftrous fifh, much larger than the hippopotamus of the Nile, and that the tooth thereof is harder and whiter than ivory. It is further pretended that this ivory was formerly an object of commerce; that they ufed to transport it through Siberia, which is the reason why feveral pieces of it are ftill found buried in the fields This is the most probable account of this fosfil ivory, of which we have already spoken; for it appears highly chimerical to pretend, that formerly there were elephants in Siberia.

THE Amur is likewife called the Black river by the Mantchoux Tartars, and the Dragon river by the Chinefe.

IT was in these countries, which for a number of years had not been fo much as heard of, that the Ruffians and Chinefe contelled the limits of their empires +. The Ruffians had fome forts on the river Amur, about three hundred leagues from the great wall. Many hoftilities had ariten between these two nations on account of these forts : at length both began to understand their interests better ; the emperor Cambi preferred peace and commerce to an unprofitable war, and fent feveral ambaffadors to Niptchou, one of those fettlements. The ambaffadors had five thousand men in their retinue, including their efcort. This was Afiatic pomp; but what was very remarkable is, that there was not one example in the annals of the empire, of an embaffy being fent to another power ; and what is

+ Memoirs of the Jefuits Pereira and Gerbillon.

F 6

1689, would e Swel per tou with Ch

M MAR

nelet

the lin

ipires I

nia, pp

to the l

nd blad

Mogd

tegreta

出際

a great l

is the li

titth, T

esint

ariast.

firme

o frad

in

oft

nelt

2 /1

YORC

fome

it,

tern

tho

the

heal

ale

and

the

W

A

fill more fingular, that the Chinefe had never concluded a treaty of peace fince the foundation of their monarchy. Though twice conquered by the Tartars, who attacked and fubjected them, they never made war upon any people, excepting a few hords that were quickly fubdued, or as quickly left to themfelves, without any treaty. So that this nation, fo renowned for morality, were intirely ignorant of what we call the "Law of nations;" that is to fay, of thofe vague rules of war and peace, of the privileges of foreign minifters, of the formalities of treaties, or of the obligations refulting from thence, nor of the difputes concerning precedency and point of honour.

Bur the chief difficulty arole to know in what language were the Chinefe to negotiate with the Ruffians, in the midft of defarts. This was removed by two Jefuits, the one a Portuguefe, named Pereira, the other a Frenchman, whole name was Gerbillon. They fet out from Pekin with the Chinefe ambaffadors, and were themfelves the real negociators. They conferred in Latin with a German belonging to the Ruffian embaffy, who underflood that language. The chief of that embaffy was Golowin, governor of Siberia, who had a more fplendid retinue than the Chinefe themfelves, and thereby gave a high idea of the Ruffian empire, to a people who thought themfelves the only powerful nation upon earth.

THE Jefuits fixed the limits of both empires, at the river Kerbechi, near the fpot where the treaty was concluded. All the country, to the fouthward

of this line of partition, was adjudged to the Chinefe, and the north to the Ruffians, who only loft a fmall fort which happened to have been built beyond the limits : a peace was agreed to, and after fome few altercations, both parties fiwore to obferve it, in the name of the fame God §; and in thefe terms, " If any one of us fhall entertain the leaft thought of renewing the flames of war, we befeech the fupreme Lord of all things, who knows the hearts of men, to punifh the traitor with immediate death "

FROM this form of treaty, figned by Chinefe and Christians, we may infer two important truths : the first, that the Chinese government is neither atheistical nor idolatrous, as has been frequently and falsy charged upon it. The second, that all nations, who cultivate the gift of reason and understanding, do, in effect, acknowledge the same God, notwithflanding the particular errors they labour under, through the want of being properly educated.

THIS treaty was drawn up in Latin, and two copies were made of it. The Ruffian ambaffadors fet their names the first to the copy that remained in their possession, and the Chinese also figned their's the first, agreeable to the custom observed by European nations, when two equal powers conclude a treaty with each other. On this occasion was observed another custom belonging to the Afiatic nations, and which was, indeed, that of the earliest ages. The treaty was engraved on two large marble pillars, erected on the fpot, to determine the boundaries of the two empires.

§ September 8, 1639, N. S. Memoirs of China,

III

nevern ion of the by the l therp a few h t this m y ignore of they. **iii**isti from the acy win know in at: WI This w uguele,1 white tind felves to n with a 1 1000 加四 10 hadel mient n empi aly por empile e the t

e fouti

IL2 THE HISTORY

THREE years after this, the Czar fent Isbrand Ides, a Dane, on an embassy to China; and the commerce he then established between the two nations, continued with advantage to each, till the rupture between them in the year 1712; but fince this short interruption, it has been renewed again with new vigour.

gary

Crim

Ps

to difi

pire o

rous gener fand

of Se on,

expl

con

gin

at

th

m

er

1

(学生変世史世史が必要世世世世世世世

CHAP. VIII.

Expedition to the PALUS MEOTIS. Conquest of ASOPH.

The Czar fends young gentlemen into foreign countries for improvement.

T was not fo eafy to fettle peace with the Turks, and indeed the time feemed come for the Ruffians to raife themfelves upon their ruins. The Venetians, who had long groaned under their yoke, began now to retrieve their 1 ffes. The Doge Moroini, the fame who had furrendered Candia to the Turks, afterwards took from them the Peloponnefus, whereby he obtained the title of *Peloponnefian*, an honour which revived the memory of the Roman republic. Leopold, emperor of Germany, had been fuccefsful against the Ottoman forces in Hungary;

113

gary; and the Poles flopt the incursions of the Crim Tartars.

PETER took advantage of these circumstances, to discipline his troops, and to gain himself the empire of the Black Sea. General Gordon marched along the Tanais, towards Asoph, with his numerous regiment of five thousand men, followed by general Le Fort, with his regiment of twelve thoufand; by a body of Strelitzes, under the command of Scheremetow and Schein, of Pruffilm extraction, by a body of Cosfacks and a large train of artillery: in short, every thing was ready for this expedition *.

THIS Ruffian army began its march under the command of marshal Scheremetow ‡, in the beginning of the fummer of 1695, to attack the town of Asoph, at the mouth of the Tanais, and at the extremity of the Palus Mæotis, now called the Zabac fea. The Czar was with the army, but only as a volunteer, being determined to learn, before be took upon him to command. During their march, they flormed two forts which the Turks had erected on the banks of the river.

THIS expedition was attended with confiderable difficulties. The place was well fortified, and defended by a numerous garrifon. A number of long-boats, refembling the Furkith faicks, and built by Venetians, with two fmall Dutch thips of war, that were to fail out of the Woronitz, could not be got ready foon enough to enter the fea of Aloph.

1694.

‡ Or Scheremetoff.

All

t Ihn

Com

「「「

the Is or thei ins. 1

theiry

Derl

ndiasi

elopian

pont

te has

20], 1

81)

TI4

All beginnings meet with obflacles. The Ruffians had never yet made a regular fiege; and therefore mifcarried in this first attempt.

MR. Jacob, a native of Dantzick, had the direction of the artillery, under the command of general Schein; for as yet they had none but foreign officers belonging to the train, and none but foreign engineers and pilots. This Jacob had been condemned to the bastinade, or knout, by Schein, the Pruffian general. At that time rigorous discipline was neceffary to firengthen command ; and the Ruffians quietly fubmitted to it, notwithftanding their natural bent to mutiny; and after the punifhment, did their duty as usual. But the Dane thought otherwife, and refolved to be revenged for the treatment he had received, and thereupon nailed up the cannon, deferted to the Turks, turned Mahometan, and defended Aloph, with great fuccefs, against his former masters. This instance shews, that the lenity, which is now practifed in Moscovy, is much preferable to the former feverities; and is better calculated to retain those in their duty who have a proper fenfe of honour. It was abfolutely neceffary, at that time, to use the utmost rigour towards the common people ; but fince their manners have been altered, the empress Elizabeth has compleated, by clemency, the work her father begun, by the authority of the laws. This lenity has been extended by this princefs, to a degree un. paralleled in the hiftory of any nation. She has promised, that, during her reign, no person shall be punished with death, and the has kept her word. She

She is regard equally lic wor prove they k with al being a The te on tho up in lebour To was n fore (in vai lohns the [P diffi *fprin* fore . Ven ing been ance the the to a great

e Ruh

there

1 the fe

id of g

foreig

but for

d beau

Schein

13 612

1 211

withit

itter the

IC WEDDE

1500051

h great

practis

rmer in holein

ur. h

the m

t hatt

legici

Sul

ríoa h

her m

She is the first fovereign who ever shewed fo much regard for the lives of mankind. By an inflitution, equally prudent and humane, malefactors are now condemned to ferve in the mines, and other public works; by which means their very punifhments prove of fervice to the ftate. In other countries, they know only how to put a criminal to death, with all the apparatus of an executioner, without being able to prevent the perpetration of crimes. The terror of death makes, perhaps, lefs impreffion on those miscreants, who are for the most part bred up in idlenefs, than the fear of punithment and hard labour, renewed every day.

To return to the fiege of Aloph, which place was now defended by the fame perion who had before directed the attacks against it; the Ruffians, in vain, attempted to take it by florm; and after lofing a great number of men, were obliged to raife the fiege.

PERSEVERANCE in his undertakings, was the diffinguishing character of Peter the Great. In the fpring of 1696, he brought a still greater army before Aloph. About this time died Czar John, his brother, who, though he had not, while living, given the leaft disturbance to Peter's authority, having enjoyed only the bare title of Czar, yet he had been fome reftraint upon him in regard to appearher at * ances. The money, which had been applied to the fupport of John's houshold, was now applied to the fupport of the army. This proved a great help to a government, whole revenues were not near fo. great as they are at prefent. Peter wrote to the emperor

emperor Leopold, to the flates-general, and to the elector of Brandenburg in order to obtain engineers, gunners, and feamen. He likewife took fome Calmucks into his pay, whole light-horfe are very ufeful against the Crim Tartars.

THE most agreeable of the Czar's fucceffes was that of his little fleet, which he faw with pleafure completed, and well commanded. It beat the Turkish faicks, fent from Constantinople, and took fome of them. The fiege was carried on regularly, but not altogether in our method; the trenches being three times deeper than ours, with parapets as high as ramparts. At length the garrifon furrendered the twenty eighth of July, N. S ‡ without being allowed the honour of war, and were obliged to deliver up the renegado Jacob to the befiegers.

THE Czar immediately began to fortify Afoph, built firong forts to protect it, and made a harbour capable of holding large veffels, with a defign to make himfelf mafter of the Streights of Caffa, or the Cimmerian Bofphorus, which opens the entrance into the Euxine or Black Sea ; places famous in ancient times, by the naval armaments of Mithridates. He left thirty two armed faicks before Afoph \uparrow , and made all the neceffary preparations for fitting out a fleet against the Turks, to confist of nine fixty gun thips, and of forty one, from thirty to fifty. He obliged his principal nobles, and the richer merchants, to contribute towards this armament ; and thinking that the clergy ought to help

\$ 1696.

+ Le Fort's memoirs.

towards

toward arch, down : tion, i mong purpo The (arman on the the T rica (and (This carrie Tartz H Was 25 1 mid coul 615 gain the the and der cla to rit

engin

lone

10 101

ecceli

id with

gen

ochsi

apete

formi ithore

blight

eges

itte

016

出版

調整

othe

ter

parali

0 00

frant

10, 2

山

ghts

15

117

towards the common caufe, he obliged the patriarch, the bishops, and the principal clergy, to pay down a fum of ready money to forward this expedition, in honour of their country, and the advantage of Chriftendom. The Coffacks were employed in building a number of those light boats in use amongft them, and which were excellent for the purpose of cruizing on the coaft of Crim Fartary. The Ottoman empire was alarmed at this powerful armament ; the first that had ever been attempted on the Mæotis. The Czar's defign was to drive the Turks and the Tartars for ever out of the Taurica Chersonesus, and afterwards to establish a free and eafy commerce with Perfia through Georgia. This is the very trade which the Greeks formerly carried on to Colchos, and to this peninfula of Crim Tartary, which Peter now feemed likely to fubdue.

HAVING fubdued the Turks and the Tartars, he was willing to accustom his people to splendid shews, as well as to military toil. He made his army to enter into Molcow, under triumphal arches, in the midft of fuperb fire-works, and every thing that could add to the luftre of the feftival. The foldiers who had fought on board the Venetian faicks against the Turks, and who were a distinct corps of themfelves, marched firft. Marshal Scheremetow, the generals Gordon and Schein, admiral Le Fort, and the other general officers, all took the precedence of the monarch in this proceffion, who declared he had no rank in the army, being defirous to convince the nobility, by his example, that merit was the only way to acquire military preferment. THIS

IIB THE HISTORY

THIS triumphal entry feemed fomewhat like to those of the ancient Romans, in which the conquerors used to expose the prisoners they had taken, to public view, and fometimes put them to death: In like manner, the flaves, taken in this expedition, followed the army; and the deferter Jacob, who had betrayed them, was drawn in an open cart, in which was a gibbet, to which his body was fastened after he had been broke upon the wheel.

ON this occasion was firuck the first medal in Russia, with this remarkable legend, in the language of the country, "PETER the FIRST, auguss emperor of Moscovy" On the reverse was the city of Asoph, with these words: "Victorious by fire and water."

PETER was very fenfibly affected in the midft of all thefe fucceffes, that his fhips and galleys in the fea of Afoph, had been built entirely by foteigners; and wifhed as earneftly to have a harbour in the Baltic, as upon the Euxine Sea.

ACCORDINGLY, in the month of March 1677, he fent threefcore young Ruffians of Le Fott's regiment into Italy, most of them to Venice, and the reft to Leghorn, to learn the naval art, and the manner of conftructing galleys. He likewife fent forty others into Holland ‡, to learn the method of building and working large thips; and others likewife into Germany, to ferve in the land forces, and be inftructed in the military difcipline of that

‡ General Le Fort's MSS.

nation.

nation

order t

frous

ed to

burg.

and St

into h

queit

Franc

too n

of Le

ed h

which

allian

the i

peti

ist in

the

ter k

1 11

A net

IBIL

renetic

Tà

n det

d gale

itely 1

harel

Sea

archil

enic

成正

itali he mi nation. At length he took a refolution to abfent himself for a few years from his own dominions, in order to learn how to govern them the better. He had a ftrong defire to improve himfelf by his own ob ervation and practice in the knowledge of naval affairs, and of the feveral arts which he was fo defirous to establish in his own country. He proposed to travel incognito through Denmark, Brandenburg, Holland, Vienna, Venice and Rome. France and Spain were the only countries he did not take into his plan; Spain, becaufe the arts he was in quest of were too much neglected there; and France, because in that kingdom they reigned with too much offentation, and that the parade and flate of Lewis XIV. which had difgufted fo many crowned heads, ill agreed with the private manner in which he proposed to travel. Moreover, he was in alliance with most of the powers, whose dominions he intended to vifit, except those of France and Rome. He likewife remembered, with refentment, the little respect shewn by Lewis XIV. to his embaffy in 1687, which had proved more famous than fuccefsful: and laftly, he already efpoused the caufe of Augustus, elector of Saxony, with whom the prince of Conti had lately entered into a competition for the crown of Poland.

CHAP.

S.Y.

CHAP. IX.

XXAXAXAXXX

Travels of Peter the Great.

AVING thus defigned to vifit the feveral kingdoms and courts above-mentioned in a private character, he put himfelf into the retinue of three ambaffadors *, in the fame manner as he had before mingled in the train of his generals at his triumphant entry into Moscow.

THE three ambaffadors were \dagger , general Le Fort, the boyar Alexis Gollowin, commiffary general of war, and governor of Siberia, the fame who figned the perpetual treaty of peace with the plenipotentiaries of China, upon the frontiers of that kingdom; and Wonitzin, diak, or fecretary of flate, who had been long employed in foreign courts. The chief retinue of this embaffy were four chief fecretaries, twelve gentlemen, two pages for each ambaffador, a company of fifty guards, with their office s, all of the regiment of Preobrazinfki, in all two hundred perfons; and the Czar, referving to himfelf only one valet-de chambre, a fervant in livery, and a dwarf, mixed with the crowd. It was an unknown thing in any hiftory, that a king of five and twenty

* 1697. † Memoirs of Petersburg, and memoirs of Le Fort.

years

years

trr in

and t

genc

print

the

1

like

the

900

Ta

ten

W

n

years of age fhould abandon his kingdom, for to learn the art of government. His victory over the Turks and Tartars, the luftre of his triumphant entry into Mofcow, the number of foreign troops attached to his fervice, the death of John his brother, and the confinement of the princefs Sophia in a cloifter, and above all, the general refpect thewn to his perfon, feemed to affore him the tranquillity of his flates during his abfence. He entrufted the regency with the boyar Strechnef, and the knez or prince Romadonowski, who were to deliberate with the reft of the boyars in affairs of importance.

fereni

he nete

esenii

eralli

17 82

ne mi

ie sies

k

fles

antal

Eccal

ien I

and and

THE troops formed by general Gordon remained at Mofcow, to maintain every thing quiet in that capital. Those Strelitzes, who were thought likely to create a diffurbance, were diffributed on the frontiers of Crim Tartary, to preferve the conquest of Aloph, and to suppress the incursions of the Tartars. Having thus provided against every incident, he gave a free scope to his passion of travelling and improving himfelf.

THIS journey having been the occasion or pretence of the bloody war, which fo long traversed, but in the end seconded, all the designs of the Czar; which dethroned Augustus king of Poland, and beflowed a crown on king Stanislaus, and then took it from him; which made Charles XII. king of Sweden the first of conquerors for nine years, and the most unfortunate of kings for nine more; it is necessary to enter into a detail of these events, and to represent in what fituation Europe was at that time.

SULTAN

122

SULTAN Mustapha II. was feated on the Ottoman throne; the weakness of whose administration would not permit him to make any great efforts, either against Leopold, emperor of Germany, whose arms were fuccessful in Hungary; or against the Czar, who had lately taken Asoph from him, and threatened to make himself master of the Luxine fea; nor even against the Venetians, who had poffassed themselves of all the Peloponnesus

JOHN Sobiefki, king of Poland, immortalized by the victory of Chockfim, and the deliverance of Vienna, died the feventeenth of June 1696, and the poffeffion of that crown was afterwards difputed by Augustus elector of Saxony, who obtained it, and Armand prince of Conti, who had only the honour of being elected.

SWEDEN had lately loft, but did not lament, Charles XI. her fovereign *, who was the first king who had ever been really absolute in that country, and who was the father of a prince still more fo, though it was abolished after his death. He left the crown to his fon Charles XII. then only fifteen years of age. This was in all appearance a conjuncture the most favourable for the Czar's grand defign of enlarging his dominions on the gulph of Finland, and on the fide of Livonia. But he did not think it enough to harrafs the Turks on the Black Sea; the fettlements on the Palus Mæotis, and the borders of the Cafpian ster, were not fufficient to answer his projects of navigation, com-

* April, 1697.

merce

me

In

the

Tope

are I

at in

nere

man

(

with

and

Was

pler

Ry

his

of

fro

laf

Rig

Cz

CO

at

tre

OU

to

Pri

in the

dmin

y gree

Gern

i Or an

frozi

tiela

hold

\$

nmorth

脑

obtin

前:

lezh.

前1

opeans

22六百

2月4

But ki

s Mai

DIT.

25

merce and power. Befides, glorv, being the darling object of this reformer, was to be found neither in Perfia nor in Turky, but in our parts of Europe, where great abilities and noble atchievements are rendered immortal. In fine. Peter did not aim at introducing either the Perfian or Turkifh manners among his fubjects, but those of England, Germany, and Holland.

GERMANY, then at war both with the Turks and with the French, and united with Spain, England, and Holland, against the fingle power of Lewis XIV. was on the point of concluding a peace; and the plenipotentiaries were already met at the cafile of Ryfwick, in the neighbourhood of the Hague.

AFFAIRS were in this fituation when Peter and his ambaffadors began their journey in the month of April 1697, by the road of great Novogorod: from thence they journeyed through Effhonia and Livonia, provinces formerly difputed by the Ruffians, Swedes, and Poles, and which the Swedes at laft conquered.

I HE fertility of Livonia, and the fituation of Riga, its capital, were fufficient temptations to the Czar, to poffers himfelf of that country. He was defirous to fee the fortifications of the citadel But count D'Alberg, governor of Riga, taking umbrage at this request, refused to tatisfy his curiofity, and treated the embaffy with contempt. This behaviour only heightened the inclination the Czar had, to make himfelf matter of those provinces.

FROM Livonia they proceeded to Brandenburg Pruffia, part of which had been inhabited by the Vol. I. G ancient

\$ 2 4

ancient Vandals; Polifh Pruffia had been ineluded in European Salmatia. Brandenburg Pruffia was a poor country, and ill peopled; yet its elector, who afterwards took the name of king, difplayed a magnificence on this occasion, a thing before unknown, and which he could ill afford. He piqued himfelf upon receiving this embaffy in his city of Konigsberg, with royal magnificence. The most fumptuous prefents were made on both fides. The contrast between the French drefs, which the court of Berlin affected, and the long Afiatic robes of the Ruffians, with their caps buttoned up with pearls and diamonds, and their feimitars hanging at their fides, produced a fingular effect. The Czar was dreffed after the German fashion. The prince of Georgia, who accompanied him, was clad in a Perfian habit, which displayed a different magnificence. This prince was taken prisoner afterwards at the battle of Narva.

PETER despifed all this external pomp; it would have been happy for him, that he had shewn an equal contempt for the pleasures of the table, in which the Germans, at that time, placed their whole delight. It was at one of these entertainments \dagger , then too much in vogue, and which are alike destructive to health and morality, that he drew his sword upon his favourite Le Fort; but expressed as much forrow for this fudden fally of pession, as Alexander did for the murder of Cly-

† Le Fort's MS. memoirs.

Wasi Vet I nels o of pal T rania its W comm lodg pant in He per, dam, thip grea mar the plo bou buil and

125

tus. He afked pardon of Le Fort, faying, that he wanted to reform his fubjects, but could not yet reform himfelf. General Le Fort, in his manufcript, praifes the Czar more for his goodnefs of heart, than he blames him for his excefs of paffion.

THE ambaffadors then travelled through Pomerania and Berlin; and from thence, one part took its way through Magdeburg, and the other by Hamburg, a city confiderable for its extensive commerce, but not for rich and populous as it has become fince. From thence they directed their route towards Minden, passed through Westphalia, and at length, by the way of Cleves, arrived at Amflerdam.

ptoos

witt

ngingt

magni

(1928

, pint

and the

otten

THE Czar arrived at this city fifteen days before the ambaffadors. At his first coming, he lodged in a house belonging to the Last India company; but foon afterwards, chofe a finall apartment in the dock-yard, belonging to the admiralty. He clothed himfelf in the habit of a Dutch fkipper, and in that drefs went to the village of Saardam, a pl. ce where at that time, a great many more fhips were built than at prefent. This village is as great, as populous, as rich, and much neater, than many opulent cities. The Czar greatly admired the multitude of men who were conftantly employed there, the order and exactness of their labours, the prodigious celerity with which they built and fitted out thips, and the incredible quantity of magazines and machines for the greater eafe and fecurity of labour. The Czar began with pur-G 2 chafing

126

chafing a boat, to which he made a maft himfelf; after that, he worked upon all the different parts in the confituation of a veffel, being clothed and fed in the fame manner as the meaneft workmen, working in the forges, the rope yards, and in feveral mills, which abound in prodigious numbers in that village, for fawing timber, extracting oil, making paper, and wire-drawing. He cauted himfelt to be inrolled in the lift of carpenters, by the name of Peter Michaelhoff, and was commonly called Peter Bas, or Matter Peter: the workmen were at first afhamed at having a crowned head for a fellow-labourer, but foon became familiarifed to the fight.

WHILE he was thus handling the compass and the ax at Saardam, a confirmation was brought him of the division in Poland, and of the double nomination of the elector Augustus, and the prince of Conti. The carpenter of Saardam immediatedly promifed king Augustus to assist him with thirty thousand men, and from his work-lost issued out orders to his army that was assembled in the Ukraine against the Turks.

His troops were victorious over the Tartars near Aloph †, and a few months afterwards took from them the city of Or, or Orkapi, which we call Precop He still continued improving in different arts: he went frequently from Saardam to Amsterdam, to hear the lectures of the celebrated anatomist Ruysch, and made himfelf master of feveral

+ 11th August, 1697.

operations

oper

ulef

weat

houl

his

his

com

ties,

fearc

new

P

tim

Hay

the

oft

the

20

pu

fai

20

of

nif

all

0

t

W

rent n

othe

800

anda

rde

25,1

(001

11

ed tol

itan itan

MART

間

de la

122

10

1.0

to de

di

100

operations in furgery, which might render himfelf ufeful both to himfelf and his officers He went through a courfe of natural philosophy, in the house of the Burgo-mafter Witzen, eclebrated for his patriotic virtue, and the noble use he made of his immense fortune, which he employed like a common friend to mankind, fending men of abilities, at a great expence, to all parts of the globe, in fearch of whatever was curious and valuable, and fitting out veffels at his own expence, to discover new countries.

PETER Bas had fuspended his labours for a fhort time, to pay a private vifit at Utrecht, and at the Hague, to William King of England, and fladtholder of the united provinces. General Le Fort was the only perfon admitted to the private conference of the two monarchs. Peter affitted afterwards at the public entry of his ambaffadors, and at their audience: they prefented in his name to the deputy of the states fix hundred of the most beautiful fables that could be procured ; and the flates, over and above the cuftomary prefents on these occasions, of a gold chain and medal, gave them three magnificent coaches. They received the first visits of all the plenipotentiaries who were at the congrefsof Ryfwick, excepting those of France, to whom they had not notified their arrival, not only becaufe the Czar espoufed the cause of Augustus against the prince of Conti, but alfo becaufe king William, whole friendship he was fond of cultivating, was averfe to a peace with France.

At his return to Amfterdam, he refumed his G 3 former

former labours, and finished with his own hands a ship of fixty guns, that he had begun himself, and sent her to Archangel, which was the only port he had at that time on the ocean.

ed, 1

now

geog

200

and

wł

sh

te

th

V

d

C

HE not only engaged in his fervice feveral French refugees, Swifs and Germans ; but he alfo fent all forts of artifts over to Molcow, and he previoufly made a trial of their feveral abilities himfelf. There are few trades or arts which he did not perfectly understand : he took a particular pleafure in correcting geographical maps, the authers of which had but a flight knowledge of his dominions, and frequently fixed the fituation of towers, and the course of rivers, without a proper knowledge of them. There is flill preferved a map, on which he marked out, with his own hand, his projected communication of the Cafpian and Black feas, the execution of which he had given in charge to Mr Brekel, a German engineer. The junction of those two feas was indeed a less arducus enterprise than that of the ocean and Mediterranean, which was executed in France; but the very idea of joining the fea of Aloph with the Calpian, aftonithed the imagination at that time; but new effablishments in that country became the object of his attention, in proportion as his fucceffes begat new hopes. And the second of the second of the

His troops, commanded by general Shein, and prince Dolgorowski, had lately gained a victory over the Fartars near Afoph, and likewife over a body of Janizaries fent by fultan Mustapha to their affiitance.

129

affiftance f. This fuccefs made him more respected, even by those who blamed him for quitting his dominions, to turn workman at Amfterdam. They now faw that the weighty affairs of the monarch did not fuffer by the labours of the philosopher, the traveller, and the artist.

1 th

12

N

işt

uzu

relet

-

=

e(1)

HE continued at Amfterdam, employ'd in his ufual occupations of thip-building, engineering, geography, and the practice of natural philosophy, till the middle of January 1693, when he fet cut for England, but fill as one of the retinue of his ambaffadors.

KING William fent his own yacht to meet him, and two fhips of war as convoy. In England he observed the same way of living as at Amsterdam and Saardam; he took an apartment near the king's dock-yard at Deptford, where he applied his time wholly to gain farther inftruction. The Dutch builders had only taught him the practical part of fhip-building. In England, he found the art better explained; for there they work according to mathematical proportion. He foon made himfelf mafter of the theory, and was able to give leffons to others. He began to build a fhip according to the English method of construction, and it proved an excellent failor. The art of watch-making, which was brought to perfection in London, next drew his attention, and he made himfelf compleat mafter of the whole theory upon which the principles of watch-making is founded : captain Perry,

> ‡ July, 1698. G 4

the

Ferg

k001

in al

the m

laws

This

know each

orbits

chin

igno

then

move

P

110

The

can

Bla

of I

mar

pou

Ru

for

Pe

his

chi

dor

130

the engineer who followed him from London to Ruffia, affirms, that from the cafting of cannon, to the fpinning of ropes, there was not one branch of trade belonging to a fhip that he did not minutely understand, and even put his hand to, as often as he came into the places where those trades were carried on.

In order to cultivate his friendship, king William allowed him to engage feveral English artificers into his fervice, as he had done in Holland; but belides artificers, he engaged likewife fome mathematicians, whom he could not fo eafily procure in Holland. One Ferguson, a Scotchman, an excellent geometrician, entered into his fervice, and was the first perfon who brought arithmetic into use in the exchequer in Ruffia, where, before that time, they made use only of the Tartarian method of reckoning, with balls ftrung upon a wire: a method which supplied the place of writing, but was very perplexing and imperfect, becaufe, after the calculation, there was no method of proving it, in order to difcover if there was any miltake. The Indian cyphers, which are now in ufe, were not introduced amongst us till the ninth century, by the Arabians; and they were not received into the Russian empire, till many centuries afterwards. This has been the fate of the arts, to make their progrefs flowly round the globe. He took with him two young fludents from a mathematical school, and this was the beginning of the marine academy, founded afterwards by Peter the Great. He observed and calculated eclipses with Fergulon.

Inden

IDBOL

e hn

) tan

king ?

lift

品

with the

eally

tchnu

is let

27112

ere to

timit

0220

ritig

sule, i

promi

1 11

北王

CEED

eneli

is a

日間

be l

100

41

eter

日日

gui

Ferguson. Perry the engineer, though greatly diffatisfied, not being fufficiently rewarded, acknowledges, that Peter made himfelf a proficient in altronomy; that he perfectly well understood the motions of the heavenly bodies, and alfo the laws of gravitation, by which they are directed. This force, now fo evidently demonstrated, and before the time of the great Newton fo little known, by which all the planets gravitate towards each other, and which retained them in their orbits, was already familiar to a fovereign of Ruffia, while other nations amused themselves with chimerical vortexes, and in the country of Galileo, ignorant people were appointed to inftruct others as ignorant, to believe the earth to be immoveable.

PERRY fet out in order to effect a junction of rivers, to build bridges, and construct fluices. The Czar's plan was to open a communication by canals between the ocean, the Cafpian, and the Black Sea.

IT ought not to be forgotten, that a company of English merchante, with the marquis of Carmarthen at their head, gave Peter fifteen thousand pounds for the permission of felling tobacco in Russia. The patriarch, by a mission feverity, had forbid this branch of trade; for the Russian church forbid fmoaking, as an unclean and finitul action. Peter, who knew better things, and who, amongs his other projects, meditated a reformation of the church, made this a pretext for trading into his dominions.

G . 5

havi

of

125

01 08

T

had

the

mar

pr

T

ly,

BEFORE Peter left England, he was entertained by king William with a fnew worthy fuch a gueft: this was a mock fea fight. Little was it then imagined, that the Czar would one day fight real battles on this element against the Swedes, and obtain victories in the Baltic. King William made him a prefent of the veffel in which he used to go over to Holland, called the Royal Transport, a beautiful yacht, and magnificently adorned. In this yacht Peter failed to Holland the latter end of 1.698, taking with him three captains of thips of war, five and twenty captains of merchant fhips, forty lieutenants, thirty pilots, thirty furgeons, two hundred and fifty gunners, and upwards of three hundred artificers. This little colony of ingenious perfons in all branches, failed from Holland to Archangel, on board the Royal Tranfport, and from thence were font into all the different places where their fervices were neceffary. 'I hole who had been engaged at Amfterdam, went by the way of Narva, which then belonged to the Swedes.

WHILE Peter was thus transplanting the arts and manufactures of England and Holland into his own country, the officers, whom he had fent to Rome, and other places in Italy, had likewife engaged feveral artifls in his fervice. General Scheremetow, who was at the head of his embally to Italy, took the tour of Rome, Naples, Venice, and Malta, while the Czar journeyed to Vienna with his other ambaffadors. He wanted only to view the military difcipline of the Germans, after having

having feen the Englith fleets and the dock-yards of Holland. Political reafons, as well as improvements, drew the Czar here. The emperor was his natural ally against the Turks. Peter had a private audience of Leopold, and the two monarchs conferred standing, to avoid the trouble of ceremony.

theni

2008

mie

atter u

1572

oged 1

THERE happened nothing remarkable during his flay at Vienna, except the celebration of the ancient feaft of Landlord and Landlady, which had been difufed for a confiderable time, and which Leopold thought proper to revive upon the Czat's account. This featt, which the Germans call Wittfchaf, is celebrated in the following manner:

THE emperor is landlord and the empress landlady; the king of the Romans, the archdukes and the archducheffes are generally their affiftants : they entertain people of all nations as their guefts, who come dreft after the most ancient failion of their respective countries: those who are invited to the feast draw lots for tickets, on each of which is written the name of the nation, and the character of the perfon they are to reprefent. One perhaps draws a ticket for a Chinefe mandarin; another for a Fartarian Mirza; a third a Perfian fatrap; and a fourth for a Roman fenator; and a princefs may, by her " ticket, be a gardener's wile, or a milk-maid; a prince may act a peafant, or a common foldier. They have dances fuitable to all these characters, and the landlord and the landlady, with the family, wait at the table. Such was the ancient in-G 6 ftitution ;

ftitution; but on this occasion 1 Joseph king of the R mans, and the counters of Iraun, represented the ancient gyptians. The archduke Charles, and the countefs of Walftein, were dreffed like the Flemings in the time of Charles the fifth. The archducheis Mary-Elizabeth, and count Traun, were in the habits of Tartars; the archduchefs Josephina, and the count of Workflaw, were habited like Perfians; and the archduchefs Mariamne, and prince Maximilian of Hanover, in the character of North Holland peafants. Peter appeared in the drefs of a Friefland boor, and all who fpoke to him addreffed him in that character, at the fame time talking to him of the great Czar of Mufcovy. 'Thefe are very triffing particulars : but whatever revives the remembrance of ancient manners and cuftoms, is in fome measure worthy of being recorded.

THE Czar was ready to fet out from Vienna, in order to proceed to Venice, to compleat his tour of influction, when he received the news of a rebellion, which had lately broke out in his dominions.

1 Le Fort's MSS, and those of Petersburg.

CHAP.

4×

The S

mig

the

dize

IEVO

S

and

ner

beg

of

the

in

fr Ir W

g

kig

eprési Ossi

effet | the h

rebitt WE

hels h

ret, it Per

and all Ater, e

dæ;

of a

urt m

nle

2001

出

011

CHAP. X.

A CONSPIRACY PUNISHED.

The Strelitzes abolished. Changes in customs, manners, state, and church.

PETER, when he fet out on his travels, had provided against every accident that might happen, even that of a rebellion. But all the toils and fatigues he had underwent to aggrandize his country, proved the cause of this present revolt.

Some boyars, who had a great regard for the ancient cultoms, and fome priefts, to whom the new cultoms appeared little better than facrilege, began thefe diffurbances; upon this the old friends of the princefs Sophia took this opportunity to flew themfelves. One of her fifters, who was flut up in the fame monaftery, contributed chiefly to excite thefe feditions. It was reprefented by all fides, that the nation was in the utmost danger from the introduction of foreigners to improve it. In fine, who would believe, that the † permiffion which the Czar had given to import tobacco into his empire, contrary to the inclination of the clergy, was one of the ftrongest motives to rebellion?

† Le Fort's MSS.

Superstition,

Superstition, the fcourge of every country, and yet the delight of the multitude, foread itfelf from the common people to the Strelitzes, who had been fcattered on the frontiers of Lithuania: they affembled in a body, and marched towards Mol. cow, with the intent to place the princefs Sophia on the throne, and for ever to prevent the return of a Czar who had violated the eftablished customs of his country, by prefuming to travel for instruction among foreigners. The forces commanded by Schein and Gordon, who were much better difciplined than the Strelitzes, met with them fifteen leagues from Molcow, gave them battle, and entirely defeated them: but this advantage gained by a foreign general over the ancient militia, among whom were feveral of the burghers of Mofcow, contributed still more to inflame the people.

To quell thefe tumults, the Czar fets out privately from Vienna, paffes through Poland, has a private interview with Auguflus, concerts meafures with that prince for extending the Ruffan dominions on the fide of the Baltic, and at length arrived at Mofcow, where he furpriled them all with his prefence †: he then confers rewards on the troops who had routed the Strelitzes, of whom the prifons were now full. If their crimes were great, their punifhment was as great. Their chies, with feveral of their officers and priefls, were condemned to death; fome were broke

+ September 1698.

upon

upon lire were . beut t maine partic were the 25 [men ly m eit T TV, 21

) had

(and

incels &

2008

油

1000051

THE

upon the wheel +, and two women were buried alive; upwards of two thousand of the Strelitzes were hanged, part of whom were hung round about the walls of the city, and others put to death in different manners, and their dead bodies remained exposed for two days in the high roads, particularly about the monaftery where the princeffes Sophia and Eudocia refided t. Monuments of stone were erected, on which their crimes and punishments were engraven. A great number of them who had wives and children at Mofcow, were difpersed with their families into Siberia, to the kingdom of Aftracan, and the country of Afoph. Their punishment was useful to the flate, as they helped to cultivate and people a large tract of land, which wanted inhabitants and improvement

PERHAPS, if the Czar had not feen it abfolutely neceffary to make fuch dreadful examples, he might have employed part of thefe Strelitzes, whom he put to death, upon the public works; whereas they were now loft both to him and the flate: the lives of men ought to be held in great effimation, effectively in a country where the encrease of inhabitants ought to have been the principal care of the lovereign; but he thought it neceffary to terrify and fubdue the fpirit of the nation by executions and the parade attending them. The entire

† Memoirs of captain Perry the engineer, employed by Peter the Great in Rufha, and MSS, of Le Fort.

f MSS. of Le Fort.

Corps

corps of the Strelitzes, whole number not one of his predeceffors had even dared to think of reducing, was broke for ever, and their very name abolithed. This revolt was effected without any refiftance, becaufe matters had been properly prepared beforehand. The Turkith fultan, Ofman, as I have already remarked, was depofed and firangled in the fame century, only for giving the Janizaries room to fulpect that he intended to reduce their number. Peter had better fuccefs, becaufe his meafures were better concerted.

OF this powerful and numerous body of the Strelitzes, he left only fome weak regiments, from whom there could no longer be any danger; and yet thefe, fill retaining their old fpirit of mutiny, revolted again in Aftracan, in the year 170,, but were foon quelled.

BUT Peter's humanity was equal to his feverity: this he thewed fome time afterwards, when he loft his favourite Le Fort, who was fnatched away by an untimely fate ‡, at the age of forty fix He honoured him with a funeral pomp equal to the greateft fovereigns, and affitted himfelf in the proceffion, carrying a pike in his hand, and marching a ter the captains, in the rank of a lieutenant, which he held in the deceafed general's regiment, hereby fetting an example to his nobles, of the refpect due to merit and the military rank.

AFTER the death of Le Fort, it appeared plainly, that the changes in the flate were not owing to that

1 March 12, 1699, N. S.

that indet const execut As formet who w of thol uled to were ti TH ready comp up in the ft eftabl A the a knez were nobi when 25 CC bey exar broi ping lum Vol Ger

that general, but to the Czar himfelf. Peter had indeed been confirmed in his defign, by his feveral converfations with Le Fort; but had planned and executed them all without his aid or affiftance.

101 00

kola

ry nag

1001 1

Derlyn

Dinn

nd fin

ie m

186000;

betaz

body i

imen

gerja

main

114

hite

rbs: 1

ied all

fr t

10 出

prot

chill

,11

herein xelta

(ei II

雨

As foon as he had fupprefied the Strelitzes, he formed regular regiments on the German model, who were all clothed in a thort uniform, inftead of those long and troublefome coats, which they used to wear before; and, at the fame time, they were taught a regular exercise.

THE regiment of Preobrazinski guards were already formed; it had taken its name from the first company of fifty men, whom the Czar had trained up in his younger days in his retreat at Preobrazinski, at the time when his fister Sophia governed the state, and the other regiment of guards was also established.

As he had paffed through the loweft degrees in the army, he ordered that the fons of his boyars and knezes thould ferve as common foldiers before they were made officers. He fent fome of the young nobility on board his fleet at Weronitz and Aloph, where he obliged them to ferve their apprenticeship as common feamen. No perfon durit refuse to obey the commands of a master, who had fet the example himfelf. The English and Dutch he had brought over with him were employed in equipping this fleet for fea, in constructing fluices, and building docks for careening the thips, and to refume the great work of joining the Don and the Volga, which had been given over by Brekel the German. And now he began to reform the council

140

cil of flate, the revenue, the church, and even fociety itfelf.

THE revenue had been hitherto transacted much in the fame manner as in Furky. Each boyar paid a flipulated fum for his lands, which he raifed upon his vaffals; the Czar appointed certain burghers and burgomafters, to be his receivers, who were too weak to claim the right of paying only such fums as they thought proper, into the public treafury. This new administration of the revenue cost him the most trouble: he was obliged to try feveral schemes before he could fix upon a proper one.

THE reformation of the church, which in all other countries is looked upon as a dangerous and difficult tafk, proved eafy to him. The patriarchs had at times oppofed the authority of the crown, as well as the Strelitzes; Nicon with infolence, Joachin, one of his fucceffors, with cunning and fubtilty.

THE bifhops had arrogated the power of life and death, a prerogative directly contrary to the fpirit of religion, and the fubordination of government. This affumed power, though of long flanding, was now taken from them. The patriarch Adrian dying at the close of this century, Peter declared that there flould never be any other.

This dignity then was entirely abolifhed, and the great revenues thereto was annexed to the public revenue, which flood in need of this addition. Actoough the Czar did not fet himfelf up at the head of the Ruffian church, as the kings of Great Britain Britai clergy than th the edi idued (elves) we ne follow whoh 08:85 the c Carry bers up ; follos bedie fbail 1 11 and Itac Britain have done in regard to the church of England; yet he made himfelf abfolute mafter of the clergy, because the fynods did not dare either to disobey the commands of a desposite forereign, or to dispute with a prince who had more knowledge in a than themselves.

13, W

ie publ

指导

upost

晶

dangen

他初

aigz

REAL

jbi

gores

趟

WE need only caft an eye on the preamble to the edict, concerning the ecclefiaftical regulations, iffued in 1721, to be convinced that he was at once mafter and legiflator : " We should deem our. felves guilty of ingratitude to the Most High, if, after having reformed the military and civil orders, we neglected the fpiritual, &c. For this cause, following the example of the most ancient kings, who have been famed for piety, we have taken upon us to make certain wholefome regulations for the clergy." It is true, he appointed a fynod for carrying into execution his laws : but the members of this fynod, at entering upon their office, were to take the oath, the form of which had been drawn up and figned by himfelf. This was an oath of fubmiffion and obedience, and was couched in the following terms: " I fwear to be a faithful and o. bedient fervant and fubject to my natural and true fovereign, and to the august fucceffors whom it shall please him to name, in virtue of the inconteltable power of which he is poffeffed : I acknowledge that he is the fupreme judge of this fpiritual college ; I fwear by God, who fees all things, that I understand and mean this oath in the full force and tenfe, which the words prefent to those who read or hear it." This oath is still stronger than that

that of fupremacy in England. The Ruffian monarch was not, indeed, one of the fathers of the fynod, but he dictated their laws; he did not touch the cenfer, but he directed the hands that bore it.

HE thought, and was fully perfuaded, that in a ftate like his, which flood in need of population, the celibacy of the monks was repugnant to nature, and to the public good. It was the ancient cuftom of the Rullian church, for fecular priefts to marry at leaft once; they were even obliged to do fo: and formerly, as foon as their wives died they cealed to be priefts. But that a multitude of young people of both fexes fhould make a vow of living ufelefs in a cloitter, and without connection with one another, at the expence of the publick, appeared to him to be of dangerous consequence. He therefore ordered, that no one should be admitted to a monaflic life, till they were fifty years old, a time of life very rarely fubject to a temptation of this kind; and he forbid any perfon to be admitted, of what age foever, who was invefted with any public employment.

THIS regulation has been abolifhed fince his death, becaufe the government has thought proper to fhew more complaifance to the monafteries : but the patriarchal dignity has never been re-eftablifhed, and its revenues are now applied to the payment of the troops.

THESE changes at first excited fome murmurings. A priest wrote to prove that Peter was antichrist, because he would have no patriarch; and the art of printing was made use of to publish libels

bels anoth and th compl het, 1 from i and m and w aboli and p publi W25 ont his to e cha the tan Th the lec lar

Refe

herst

id nu;

that

led, th

of posi

iticiette -

rielist

to del

d the

é yeup

nge

thats

aredini

e their ted in v

old, 11

n dia

itth,

町館

hells

hought

aters

1000

朝首

10 20

ter 11

iardi

pull

bels againft him : but on the other hand, there was another prieft who flarted up, to prove that Peter could not be antichrift, becaufe the number fix hundred and fixty fix was not found in his name, and that he had not the fign of the Beaft. All those complaints however were foon filenced Peter, in fact, gave much more to the church than he took from it; for by degrees, he made the clergy wifer, and more regular. He founded three colleges at Mofcow, where they teach the learned languages, and where those who are defigned for the ministry are obliged to fludy.

ONE of the moft neceffary reformations was the abolition, or at leaft the mitigation of the three Lents, an ancient fuperflition of the Greek church, and prejudicial to thofe who are employed in the public works, and more efpecially to foldiers, as was the ancient Jewifh fuperflition of not fighting on the fabbath day. Accordingly the Czar abfolved his workmen and foldiers from obferving thefe Lents, in which, though they were not permitted to eat, it was cuftomary to get drunk. He alfo ditpenfed with their obfervance of fait days : the chaplains of the fleet and army were obliged to fet the example, which they did without much reluctance.

THE calendar was an object of importance. The regulation of the year was formerly made by the heads of the clergy, on account of their knowledge in aftronomy, as well as fettling the particular fettivals.

THE year began on the first of September among the

the Ruffians. Peter ordered, that henceforth it fhould commence the first day of January, as in the other nations of Europe. This change was appointed to take place in the year 1700, at the beginning of the century, which he ordered to be celebrated by a jubilee, and feveral grand folemnities. It was a matter of furprize to the populace. how the Czar fhould be able to change the course of the fun. Some obflinate people, perfuaded. that God had made the world in September, continued their ancient flyle : but the alteration took place in all the public offices, in the court of chancery, and in a fhort time throughout all the em. pire. Peter did not adopt the Gregorian calendar, which English mathematicians rejected ; and which must, neverthelefs, be one day received in every country.

EVER fince the fifth century, the time when letters were fifth introduced amongft them, they had been accuftomed to write upon long rolls, made either of the bark of trees, or of parchment, and afterwards of paper; and the Czar was obliged to publith an edict, ordering every one, for the future, to write after the manner we do.

THE reformation now was eftablished every where. Their marriages were made formerly after the fan e manner as in Turky and Persia, where the bridegroom does not fee his bride till the contract is figned, and they can no longer fly from their words. This custom may do very well amongst those people where polygamy prevails, and where the women are always shut up; but it is a very Vert one TE IT (ers) peopl of ant

Ve

Y

the pa

31.5

ved in:

部當

ns

The

eil

ETZ

very bad one in countries where a man is tied to one wife, and where divorces are feldom allowed.

THE Czar wanted to accuftom his people to the manners and cuftoms of the nations which he had feen in his travels, and from whence he had taken the mafters who were now inftructing them.

Ir was proper, that the Ruffians should not be clothed in a different manner from those who were teaching them the arts ; because the hatred to ftra gers, which is but too natural to mankind, is not a little kept up by a difference of drefs. The full drefs, which at that time partook of the falhions of the Poles, the Tartars, and the ancient Hungarians, was, as we have elsewhere observed, very noble; but the drefs worn by the burghers and common people refembled those jackets plaited round the waift, which are still given to the poor, in fome of the French hospitals. For the most part, the robe was generally the drefs of all nations, as being a garment that required the leaft trouble and art; and for this reafon, the beard was fuffered to grow. The Czar had but little difficulty in introducing our mode of drefs, and the cultom of thaving among his courtiers; but the people were more difficult, and he found himfelf obliged to lay a tax on long coats and beards. Patterns of coats were hung up in public places; and whoever refused to pay the tax, were obliged to fuffer their robes, and their beards, to be fhortened. All this was done in a jocular manner, and this air of pleafantry prevented rebellions.

IT has ever been the defign of all wife legiflators,

tors, to render mankind more fociable; but it is nor fufficient to accomplift this end, that they live together in towns; there muft be a mutual intercourfe of civility. This intercourfe fweetens all the bitternefs of life. The Czar, therefore, introduced thefe affemblies, which the Italians call ridotti To thefe affemblies he invited all the ladies of the court, with their daughters, and they were to appear drefied after the fafhions of the fouthern nations of Europe He was himfelf at the pains of drawing up rules of decorum to be obferved at thefe focial entertainments. Thus even to good manners among his fubjects, was his own work, and which time accomplifues.

To make his people better pleafed with thefe in. novations, he abolished the word golut, Asve, always made use of by the Ruffians when they addreffed their Czar, or prefented any petition to him ; and ordered, that, for the future, they fhould make use of the word raab, which fignifies fubject. This alteration did not diminish the obedience due to the fovereign, and yet was the most likely means of conciliating their affections. Every month was productive of some new change or inflitution. He carried his attention even to the ordering pofts to be fet up in the road betwixt Molcow and Woronitz, to ferve as mile flones at the diffance of every verft, that is to fay, every leven hundred paces; and had a kind of caravanferas, or public inns, built at the end of every twentieth verft.

WHILE he was thus extending his concerns for the common people, the merchants, and the traveller,

+5

ler,

CYO

mrt

it net

tion (

have

Was a

bore

ters

any

S

appla

int

tant

fide.

ed

160

Wit

clu

清朝

witth)

allte

nd the

the loc at the

e obleti

eren h

15 0101

with

hat, ha

when the

ly petit

t, the

pund #

bedien

山山

FILOD

itania

ting pi

and T

ance

ic inthe

theit

ler, he refolved to make an addition to the brilliancy of his own court. For though he was an enemy to pomp or fhew in his own perfon, he thought it neceffary in those about him. For this purpose he inflituted the order of St. Andrew ‡, in imitation of the feveral orders with which all the courts of Europe abound. Golowin, fucceffor to Le Fort in the dignity of high admiral, was the first knight of this order. It was esteemed an high reward, to have the honour of being admitted a member. It was a kind of badge that entitled the perfon who bore it to the veneration of the publick. This mark of honour costs nothing to the fovereign, and flatters the felf-love of a fubject, without giving him any additional power.

So many useful innovations were received with applause by the wifest part of the nation; and the murmurings and complaints of those who had adhered to the ancient customs, were filenced by the acclamations of men of found judgment.

WHILE Peter was thus making a new creation in the interior part of his flate, he concluded an advantageous truce with the Turks, which allowed him the liberty to extend his territories on another fide. Muftapha the Second, who had been defeated by prince Eugene, at the battle of Zenta in 1607, flripped of the Morea by the Venetians, and unable to defend Afoph, was obliged to make peace with his victorious enemies; this peace was concluded at Carlowitz, between Peterwaradin and Sa-Vol. I. H

† Sept. 1 oth 1698. It is to be observed that I always follow the new flyle in my dates.

ankamen, places now famous by his defeats *. Temafwaer was made the boundary of the German and Ottoman dominions. Kaminiek was reftored to the Poles; the Morea, and fome towns in Dalmatia, which had been taken by the Venetians, remained in their hands for fome time; and Peter the First continued in poff-fion of Afoph, and of a few forts raifed in its neighbourhood.

COU

CTOW

been

Swee

pro

wh

wa ny,

WI

to fel

(q

IT was impossible for the Czar to extend his dominions on the fide of Turky, as the forces of that empire would be united against him, which were formerly divided. His naval projects were too large for the Palus Mæotis, and the fettlements on the Cafpian Sea would not admit of a fleet of men of war: he therefore turned his views towards the Baltic Sea, but without relinquishing the navigation of the Fanais and Wolga.

CHAP. XI.

WAR WITH SWEDEN.

The Battle of Narva.

OW a grand fcene was opened on the frontiers of Sweden ‡. One of the principal cautes of all the revolutions which happened from Ingria, as far as Drefden, and which laid fo many countries

* Jan. 26. 1699.

\$ 1700.

215 \$

ias reti

enting

; 211

loph, z

ctend is

forcest

, stid

âs ve

ettlens

a feet d

s towal

四出

10000X

CI

countries waste for the space of eighteen years, was the abuse of the supreme power under Charles XI. king of Sweden, father of Charles XII. This fact cannot be too often repeated, as it concerns every crowned head, and the fut jects of every nation. Almoft all Livonia, with the whole of Effonia, had been abandoned by Poland to Charles XI. king of Sweden, who fucceeded Charles X. precifely at the time of the treaty of Oliva. It was ceded, as is the cultom, with a refervation of rights and privileges. Charles XI having little regard to them, John Renold Patkul, a Livonian gentleman, came to Stockholm in 1692, at the head of fix deputies of the province, and laid their complaints at the foot of the throne, in respectful, but strong terms +. Inftead of an answer, the fix deputies were imprisoned, and Patkul was condemned to lofe both his honour and his life. But he loft neither, for he made his escape to the country of Vaud in Switzerland, where he remained fome time. When he afterwards was informed, that Augustus, elector of Saxony, had promited at his accession to the throne of Poland, to recover the provinces that had been wreited from that kingdom ; he went to Drefden, to thew that prince how eafily he might make himfelt matter of Livonia, and revenge himlelf upon a H 2 king,

+ Norberg, chaplain and confector to Charles XII, fays in his hiflory, "That he had the infolence to complain of opp effions, and that "he was condemned to lofe his honour and life." This is fpeaking like the prieft of defpotifm He thould have observed, that no one can deprive a citizen or his honour, for doing his duty,

king, only feventeen years of age, for the loffes that Poland had fuffained by his anceftors. had

12

Å

not

enen

enter

marc

va, ti of N

T

W25

his

men

mar

tun oth

ftr

Wh

late

Do

lor

the

16

10

AT the tame time Peter was employing his thoughts on feizing Ingria and Carelia. Thefe provinces had formerly belonged to the Ruffians, but the Swedes had made themfelves mafters of them by force of arms, in the time of the falfe Demetrius's, and had kept the poffefinon of them by treaties: another war and new treaties might reftore them again to Ruffia. Patkul went from Drefden to Mofcow, and having flirred up the two monarchs to avenge his caufe, he cemented a clofe union between them, and haftened their preparations for invading all the places fituated to the eaft and fouth of Finland.

AT this time alfo, the new king of Denmark, Frederic IV entered into an alliance with the Czar and the king of Poland, against Charles, the young king of Sweden, who feemed not able to withstand their united forces. Patkul had the fatisfaction of befieging the Swedes in Riga, the capital of Livonia, and commanding as a major-general.

THE Czar marched near fixty thousand men into Ingria. It is true, that, in this great army, he had no more than twelve thousand regular foldiers, being those he had diffiplined himfelf; namely, the two regiments of guards, and fome few others, the rest being a badly armed militia, with some Coffacks, and Circassian Tartars; but he carried with him one hundred and forty-five pieces of cannon. He laid fiege to Narva, a small town in Ingria, that had

had a very commodious harbour, and it was generally thought the place would be foon taken.

The

emeta

tain:

and

Des

,即

o mi

論

利用し

1

10 mil

a ini

國

ottos

lonel

ALL Europe know *, how Charles XII. when not quite eighteen years of age, withftood all his enemies, and attacked them one after another. He entered Denmark, put an end to the war in that kingdom in lefs than fix weeks, fent reinforcements to Riga, obliged the enemy to raife the fiege, and marching against the Russians, encamped before Narva, through the midst of ice and snow, in the month of November.

THE Czar, who looked upon Narva as his own, was gone to Novogorod, and had taken with him his favourite Menzikoff, then a lieutenant in the company of bombardiers of the Preobraziniki regiment \ddagger , and afterwards raifed to the rank of fieldmarihal, and prince; a man whole amazing fortunes entitle him to be fpoken of more fully in another place.

PETER left the command of the army, with infiructions for the fiege, with the prince of Croy; whole family came from Flanders, and who had lately entered into the Czar's fervice ‡. Prince Dolgorouki was commiffary of the army. The jealoufy between thefe two chiefs, and the abfence of the Czar, was one reafon of the unparalleled defeat at Narva.

CHARLES XII. having landed at Pernau in Livonia with his troops, in the month of October, H 3 marched

* Sept. 1700. † Nov. 18. See the hiftory of Charles XII.

152

marched northward to Revel, where he defeated an advanced body of Ruffians. He continued his march, and meeting with another body, routed that likewife. The routed troops returned to the camp before Narva, which they filled with confternation. The month of November was far advanced ; Narva, though unskilfully befieged, was on the point of furrendering. The young king of Sweden had not at that time above nine thousand men with him. and could bring only ten pieces of cannon to oppofe an hundred and forty-five, with which the Ruffian entrenchments were defended. All the relations of that time, and all hiftorians, without exception, agree in making the Ruffian army then before Narva amount to eighty thousand men. The memoirs with which I have been furnished fay fixty thousand; be that as it will, it is certain, that Charles had not quite nine thousand, and that this battle was one of those, which evince, that the greatest victories have been frequently gained by inferior numbers, ever fince the famed one of Arabella.

the

fri

the

e

k

I

J

CHARLES was not afraid to attack this great army, with his fmall number of troops: and taking advantage of a violent wind, and a great florm of fnow, which blew directly in the faces of the Ruffians, he attacked their entrenchments under cover of fome pieces of cannon §, which he had pofted advantageoufly for the purpofe. The Ruffians had not time to form themfelves in the midft of that cloud

§ Nov. 30, 1700,

este

IS BE

that

ê Cim

the state

1 mil

vid.

01, W 201

néi.

ertais

回旗

内国

1 gall

150

1 572

加加

at fail

pter o

cloud of fnow, that beat full in their faces, and aftonished by the discharge of cannon, that they could not fee; and did not know the weakness of Charles's army.

THE duke de Croy attempted to give his orders, but prince Dolgorouki would not obey them. The Ruffian officers role upon the German officers : and murdered the duke's fecretary, colonel Lyon, and feveral others. Every one abandoned his poft ; and tumult, confusion, and a panic terror, spread through the whole army. The Swedish troops had nothing more to do, but to cut in pieces those who were flying. Some threw themfelves into the river Narva, where great numbers were drowned ; others threw down their arms, and begged for quarters from the conquering Swedes.

THE duke de Croy, general Allard, and the reft of the general officers, dreaded the Ruffians more than the Swedes, and went in a body and furrendered themfelves prifoners to count Steinbok. The king of Sweden now became mafter of all the artillery. Thirty thousand of the vanquished enemy laid down their arms at his feet, and filed of bareheaded and difarmed before him. Prince Dolgorouki, and all the Ruffian generals, came and furrendered themfelves, as well as the Germans, but did not know till fome time after they had furrendered, that they had been conquered by eight thousand men. Amongst the prifoners was the fon of a king of Georgia, whom Charles fent to Stockholm; his name was Mittelfky Czarovitz, or Czar's fon, a further proof, that the title of Czar, 10

or Tzar, had not its original from the Roman Cæfars. 1

bel

ziae

poffe

128 0

ed

oth

Pet

ing

chi

in

po

Pro

001

to

fen

er (

of

\$4

CHARLES XII. loft no more than one thousand two hundred men in this battle. The Czar's journal, which has been fent me from Petersburg, fays, that including those who died at the fiege of Narva, and in the battle, and those who were drowned in their flight, the Ruffians loft no more than fix thoufand men. Want of discipline, and a panic that feized the army, was the fole caufe of the lofs of this battle. The captives were four times greater in number than the conquerors; and if we may believe Norberg +, count Piper, who was afterwards taken prifoner by the Ruffians, reproached them, that the number of their people made prifoners in the battle exceeded by eight times the number of the whole Swedish army. If this is truth, the Swedes must have made upwards of feventy two thousand prisoners. This shews how feldom writers come at the truth of particular circumstances. One thing, however, equally inconteflible and extraordinary is, that the king of Sweden should tell one half of the Ruffian foldiers to go back, after having difarmed them, and the other half to repais the river, with their arms; by this unaccountable conduct, reftoring to the Czar troops, that, being afterwards well difciplined, became invincible towards their enemies t.

+ Vol I p 439 of the 4to edition printed at the Hague.

[‡] The chaptain Norberg pretends, that, immediately after the battle of Narva, the Grand Signior wrote a letter of congratulation to the King of Sweden, in these terms, " The fultan Baffa, by the grace CHARLES

the

burght of No

107m

Part

101 212

12.54

aten

nine

加出

6163[1

的面积

Inces 1

ताव

(del

他加

nst:

able 0

int

: 100

に

in 21

却

III

CHARLES reaped all the advantages that could be had from a compleat victory. Immense magazines, transports loaden with provisions, the enemies posts evacuated or taken, and the whole country in poffession of the Swedes, were consequences of the fortune of this day. Narva was now relieved, the fhattered remains of the Ruffian army durft not thew themfelves; the whole country as far as Pleikow lay open; the Czar feemed to have lolt all refource for carrying on the war; and the king of Sweden, victorious in lefs than twelve months over the monarchs of Denmark, Poland, and Ruffia, was looked upon as the first prince in Europe, at an age when other princes hardly think of military glory. But Peter's unthaken conftancy prevented him from being difcouraged in any of his projects.

A RUSSIAN bithop composed a prayer to St. Nicholas \dagger , on this occasion, which was publicly read in all the churches throughout Russian This composition shews the spirit of the times, and the inexpressible ignorance from which Peter delivered his country. Amongst other things, it says, that the furious and terrible Swedes were forcerers; and complains that St. Nicholas had entirely abandoned his Russians. The prelates of that country would bluss to write such stuff at prefent; and, without any offence to the holy St. Nicholas, the people ioon per-

" of God, to Charles XII, &c." The letter was dated from the aera of the creation of the world.

† This prayer is printed in most of the journals and historical pieces of these times. It is inferted in the history of Charles XII. King of Sweden.

ceived

1.55

ceived that Peter was the most proper person to be addreffed.

u po u k

et us Pe and i

to M own

the

the

fix y

the

evi

the

the

Tit

211 (

101

W

Ir

CHAP. XII.

Refources after the battle of Narva. That difaster entirely repaired. Peter gains a victory near the fame place. He executes great defigns in Russia. The person, who was afterwards empress, made prisoner at the facking of a city. Peter's successes. His triumph at Moscow ‡.

The years 1701 and 1702.

H E Czar having quitted his army before Narva, towards the end of November 1700, in order to go and concert with the king of Poland, was informed on the road, of the victory gained by the Swedes. His conftancy in all emergencies was equal to the intrepidity and valour of Charles. He deferred his conference with Auguitus, and haftened to apply a fpeedy remedy to the difordered flate of his affairs. The difperfed troops rendezvoused at great Novogorod, and went from thence to Plefkow, on the Lake Peipus.

* This chapter, and the following, are taken entirely from the journal of Peter the Great, fent me from Petersburg.

IT was a great deal for him to be able to fland upon the defensive, after fo fignal a defeat: "I " know very well, faid he, that the Swedes will a " long time be fuperior, but at last they will teach " us to conquer them."

PETER having provided for the prefent neceffityt, and ordered men to be raifed on every fide, he goes to Molcow to haften the caffing of new cannon, his own having been all taken before Narva. There being a fearcity of metal, he took all the bells of the churches and of the religious houses in Moscow. This action flewed him free of fuperflition, and at the fame time it was no fign of impiety. With those bells he made one hundred large cannon, one hundred and forty-three field pieces, from three to fix pounders, befides mortars and haubitzers, which were forwarded to Plefkow. In other countries, the fovereign commands, and his fubjects execute his orders; but here the Czar was obliged to fee every thing done himfelf. While he was making these preparations, he entered into a negotiation with the king of Denmark, who engaged to affilt him with three regiments of foot, and three of horfe; an engagement which that monarch could not fulfil.

97) III

nui

upreli, i

Petri

21271

ember

(面影

r of Ca

Igela

加節

finit

No fooner was this treaty figned, than he burried to the theatre of war. He had an interview with king Augustus at Birzen, on the frontiers of Courland and Lithuania^{*}. His object was, to confirm that prince in his refolution of maintaining the war against Charles XII, and at the fame time to

> † 1703, * Fcb. 27. H 6

prevail

prevail on the Polish Diet to enter into the quartel. It is well known, that a king of Poland is no more than the head perfon in the republic. Peter had the advantage of being always obeyed : but the kings of Poland and England, and at prefent the king of Sweden, are all obliged to treat with their fubjects. Patkul and a few Poles in the intereft of their king affisted at these conferences Peter promised to affift them with fubfidies, and an army of twenty-five thousand men Livonia was to be reftored to Poland, in cafe the diet would act in conjunction with their king, and affift in recovering this province: the diet hearkened more to their fears, than to the Czar's propofals. The Poles were apprehenfive of having their liberties reftrained by the Saxons and Ruffians, and were still more afraid of Charles XII. It was therefore agreed by the majority, not to engage in the quarrel.

THE partifans of Augustus grew enraged against the contrary faction, and a civil war was kindled up in the kingdom; because their monarch had an intention to recover a confiderable province.

PETER then had only a weak ally in king Auguftus ¶, and the Saxon troops could be of fmall fervice; and the terror which Charles XII. infpired on every fide, obliged Peter to the neceffity of depending entirely upon his own firengeb.

AFTER an expeditious journey from Mofcow to Courland *, to confer with Augullus; he posted back from Courland to Mofcow, to forward the

* March I.

9 Feb, 1701,

accomplishment

20000

to Ril

on tro TH

netal t

the Sai

them ;

made

N

gage

gene

vid

Liv

in

the

gita

that

the

Up

accomplifhment of his promifes. Accordingly he difpatched prince Repnin, with four thouland men, to Riga, on the banks of the Duna, where the Saxon troops were entrenched.

10 19

如

tere

REFE

pin

120

tin

1081

ott

出版

jai

前到

THE rapid progress of Charles increased the general terror ‡; for passing the Duna, in spite of all the Saxons, who were advantageously posted on the opposite fide; he gained a compleat victory over them; and then, without waiting a moment, he made himstelf master of Courland, advanced into Lithuania, and by his prefence encouraged the Polish faction that opposed Augustus.

NOTWITHSTANDING all this, Peter still purfued his defigns. General Patkul, who had engaged in his fervice, procured him fome German officers, disciplined his troops, supplied the place of general le Fort; and finished what the other began. The Czar ordered relays of horses to be provided for all the officers, and even for the German, Livonian, and Polith foldiers, who came to ferve in his armies. He took particular care of their arms, cloathing and substance.

On the confines of Livonia and Edonia, and to the eaftward of the province of Novogorod, lies the great lake Peipus, which receives from the fouth fide of Livonia the water of the river Velika, and gives rife in its northern part to the river Naiova, that waftes the walls of the town Naiva, near which the Swedes got their famous victory. This lake is upwards of thirty leagues in length, and from twelve

to

to fifteen in breadth. It was neceffary to keep a fleet there, to prevent the Swedish ships from infulting the province of Novogorod ; to be ready to make a descent upon their coasts, and above all, to be a nurfery for feamen. Peter employed the greatest part of the year 1703 in building on this lake an hundred half gallies, to carry about fifty men each ; and other veffels were fitted out on the lake Ladoga. He directed the building of thefe veffels him. felf and fet his new failors to work : those who had been employed in 1697, at the Palus Mæotis, were then stationed near the Baltic. He frequently left those affairs to go to Moscow, and the other provinces; in order to establish the observance of the late cufloms he had begun, or to introduce new opes.

ALL princes who have employed the times of peace in founding and effablithing public works, have perpetuated their memories: but that Peter, juft after his defeat at Narva, thould apply to the junction of the Baltic, Cafpian and the European feas by canals, has crowned him with more real glory, than the moft fignal victory. It was in the year 1702, that he began to dig that deep canal, intending to join the Fanais and the Wolga. Other communications were likewife to be made, by means of lakes between the I anais and the Duna; whofe waters empty themfelves into the Baltic, in the neighbourhood of Riga. But this latter project feemed to be ftill at a great diffance, for Peter was far from having Riga in his poficifion.

WHILE Charles was ravaging all Poland, Pe-

tr

0 100

油油

10 101

men to

effit

uta)

othern

DC: di

odate

tim

nip to:

ettil

100

3410

ter brought from that kingdom, and from Saxony, a number of fhepherds with their flocks, in order to have wool fit for making good cloth; he likewife erected linen and paper manufactories: gave orders for collecting a number of mechanics; tuch as fmiths, braziers, armourers and founders; and the Siberian mines were dug for ore. Thus was he continually contriving means for the embellifhment and defence of his dominions.

CHARLES pushed on his victories, and left a fufficient body of troops, as he imagined, on the frontiers of the Czar's dominions, to secure all the possible filling of Sweden. He had concerted a plan to dethrone Augustus, and afterwards to pursue the Czar with his victorious arms to the gates of Mosscow.

THERE happened feveral flight fkirmifhes during this year, between the Ruffians and Swedes, in which the latter did not always prove fuperior; and even in those where they had the better, the Ruffians improved in the art of war. In fhort, in little more than twelve months after the battle of Narva, Peter's troops were fo well disciplined, that they defeated one of the best generals belonging to Charles XII.

PETER was then at Plefkow, from whence he detached numerous troops on all fides, to attack the Swedes; the Ruffians were victorious, notwithflanding being only commanded by a Ruffian general, a native of the country, and not a toreigner. His general Scheremetow, by a fkiltul manœuvre, furprifed feveral troops of the Swedith general Slippembac,

pembac *, on the frontiers of Livonia; and at laft obtained a victory over that officer himfelf. And now, for the first time, the Ruffians took from the Swedes four of their colours; which was thought a great number.

THE lakes of Peipus and Ladago were for fome time afterwards the theatres of naval engagements between the Ruffians and Swede; in which the latter had the fame advantages as by land; owing to their good difcipline: yet the Ruffians had fome few fucceffes with their half gallies, in a general action at the lake Peipus, in which field marfhal Scheremetow took a Swedifh frigate +.

IT was by means of this lake the Czar kept Livonia and Effonia in continual alarms; his gallies often difimbatked feveral regiments in those provinces; who re-imbatked whenever they tailed of fuccels; but when they had any advantage, they always improved it: the Swedes were defeated twice in the neighbourhood of Derpt ‡, while they were victorious every where else.

In all these engagements the Russians were always superior in number: which made Charles XII. who was to fuccessful in every other place, give himself little concern about the small success of the Czar, not confidering that the numerous forces of his rival were every day growing more formidable, as they improved in their difcipline, fo as one day to become a match for himself.

WHILE both nations were thus engaged by fea

• Jan. 11. 1702. † May. ‡ June and July.

and

te

Dai

hit

物

RIL

gen and

il.

四日

thi

and land in Livonia, Ingria, and Eftonia, the Czar receives advice, that a Swedith fleet had fet fail to deftroy Archangel; upon which he immediately fled thither, and all were aftonifhed to hear of his being on the coafts of the Frozen fea, when he was thought to be at Mofcow. He put the town into a pofture of defence, prevented the landing of the Swedes, drew the plan of a citadel, called the New Dwina, laid the first flone, returned to Mofcow, and from thence to the feat of war.

CHARLES advanced into Poland; but the Ruffians, on their fide, made a progrefs in Ingria and Livonia. Marfhal Scheremetow marched to meet the Swedifh army commanded by Slippembac, fought a battle near the little river Embac, and defeated him, taking fixteen colours, and twenty pieces of cannon. Norberg places this action on the first of December 1701; but the journal of Peter the Great fixes it on the nineteenth of July 1702.

THE Ruffian general then marched onwards ¶, haid the whole country under contribution, and takes the little town of Marienburgh, fituated on the confines of Ingria and Livonia. There are feveral towns of this name in the north of Europe; but this, though it no longer exifts, is more celebrated in hillory than all the others, by the adventure of the emprefs Catherine.

THIS little town, having furrendered at diferetion, the Swedes, who defended it, either through

¶ August 6th.

mistake

164

missake or design, fet fire to the magazines. The Russians, enraged at this, destroyed the town, and carried away all the inhabitants. Among the prifoners was a young woman, a native of Livonia, who had been educated by Mr. Gluck, a Lutheran minisser of that place, and who asterwards became the fovereign of those who had taken her captive, and governed Russia by the name of the empress Catherine.

THERE had been feveral inflances before this of private women being raifed to the throne. Nothing was more common in Ruffia, and in all Afiatic kingdoms, than for kings to marry their own fubjects; but that a poor firanger, who had been taken prifoner in the ruins of a plundered city, flould become the abfolute fovereign of that very empire, whither fhe was led captive, is an inflance which fortune and merit never produced but this time in the annals of the world.

THE Czar's arms were fuccefsful in Ingria; for their half galleys on the lake Ladoga compelled the Swerifh fleet to retire to Wiburg, a town fituate at the other extremity of this great lake, from whence they could fee the flege of the fortrefs of Noteburg, which was then carried on by general Scheremetow. This was an affair of much greater importance than was imagined at that time, as it might open a communication with the Baltic Sea, the conflant aim of Peter the Great.

NOTEBURG was a firong fortified town, built on an ifland in the lake Ladoga, which it entirely commands, and by that means, whoever is mafter of

1 50

R

2

Verin

¥11

12

88

100

of it, must be masters also of that part of the river Neva, which empties itself into the Baltic not far from thence. The Ruffians bombarded the town night and day, from the eighteenth of September to the twelfth of October; and at length, having made three breaches, gave a general affault. The Swedish garrifon was reduced to an hundred men, only capable of defending the place; and what is very altonishing, they continued to defend it, and obtained an honourable capitulation even in the breaches. Colonel Slippembac, who commanded there, would not furrender the town, but on condition of being permitted to fend for two Swedifh officers from the nearest post, to examine the breaches, in order to be witneffes for him to the king his mafter, that eighty three foldiers, who were all then left of the garrifon capable of bearing arms, befides one hundred and fity fix fick and wounded, did not surrender to a whole army, till it was impoffible for them to fight longer, or to preferve the town. This circumstance alone shews, what fort of an enemy the Czar had to contend with, and the neceffity there was of all his industry to improve his troops in military difcipline. He diftributed gold medals among the officers, and beflowed rewards on all the private men; except a few, whom he punithed for running away, during the affault. I'heir fellow foldiers spit in their faces, and afterwards shot them to death, thus adding ignominy to punishment.

NOTEBURG was repaired, and its name changed to that of Shluffelburg, or the city of Key, becaufe

caufe that place is the key of Ingria and Finland. The first governor was that Menzikoff, whom we have already mentioned, and who was become a very good officer, and had fignalized himfelf, during the kege, and therefore deferved that honour. This example ferved as an encouragement to all who have merit, without being distinguished by high birth.

AFTER this campaign of 1702, Peter was defirous that Scheremetow, and the officers who had fignalized themfelves, fhould make a triumphant entry into Mofcow. All the prifoners taken in this campaign marched in the retinue of the conquerors *, and before them were carried the Swedifh colours and flandards, together with the flag of the Swedifh frigate taken on the lake Peipus. Peter affifted himfelf in the preparations for this triumphal entry, as he had fhared in the great actions that were celebrated by it.

THESE folemnities were defigned to infpire emulation, otherwile they would have been no more than idle ottentation Charles difdained all thefe public fhews, and, after the battle of Narva, held his enemies, their efforts, and their triumphs, in equal contempt.

* December 17, 1992.

charles street of the literature over CHAP.

0個1

12

the inter

torpe Seel

h

inat

ost

fpit

的副

2, 1

荫

CHAP. XIII.

REFORMATION AT MOSCOW.

New fuccesses. Founding of Petersburg. The Czar takes Narva, &c.

The year 1703.

'HE fhort flay which the Czar made at Mofcow, in the beginning of the winter 1703. was employed in feeing all his new regulations executed, and in improving the civil as well as the military government. Lven his very diversions were confectated to make his fubjects relifh the new manner of living he had introduced amongft them. It was with this view he invited all the boyars and ladies of Molcow to the marriage of one of his buffoons, at which every one was required to appear dreffed in the ancient fashion. They ferved up the dinner just in the fame manner as those in the fixteenth century ‡. By an old superstitious cultom, no one was to light fire on the weddingday, even in the feverest cold. Thus custom was observed very firicily upon this occasion. The Ruffians formerly never drank wine, but only mead and brandy; no other liquors were allowed on this day,

Taken from the journal of Peter the Great.

and, when they complained, he replied, in a joking manner, "This was a cuftom with your anceffors, and old cuftoms are always the beft." This pleafantry contributed much to reform thofe who preferred paft times to the prefent, or at leaft it put a flop to their murmurings; and there are feveral nations that fland in need of the fame example.

An effablishment more useful than any of the reft, was that of a printing-house for Russian and Latin types, the materials of which were brought from Holland. They began with printing translations in the Russian language of feveral books of morality and polite literature. Ferguson effablished schools for geometry, astronomy, and navigation.

ANOTHER foundation, no lefs neceffary and ufeful, was that of a large hofpital; not one of those houses which encouraged idleness, and perpetuated the misery of the people, but fuch as the Czar had feen at Amsterdam, where old perfons and children are employed at work, and where every perfon is ferviceable to the public.

He eftablished many manutactures; and as foon as he fet a-going all those new arts which he had brought into Moscow, he haltened to Veronitz, to give directions for building two ships of eighty guns, with long chests exactly closed to the ribs of the vessel, for the easier floating of the ship over the shoals and banks of fand that lay about Atoph. A contrivance like that used in Holland, to get their large ships over the Pampus.

HAVING

e m

223

breat

國

1000

HAVING prepared every thing for an expedition againft the Turks, he immediately took his route for the frontiers of Sweden. He alfo went to vifit the fhips that he gave orders to be built at Olonitz *, a town between the lakes of Ladoga and Onega, where he had eftablifhed a foundery for making all kinds of arms; and where every thing had all the look of preparations for war; whilft at Mofcow flourifhed all the arts of peace. A fpring of mineral waters, which has been lately difcovered near Olonitz, has added to the reputation of that place. From thence he proceeded to Shluffelburg, to improve the fortifications.

WE have already observed, that Peter was determined to pass regularly through all the military degrees: he had ferved as lieutenant of bombardiers under prince Menzikoff, before that favourite was made governor of Shluffelburg, and now he took the rank of captain, and ferved under marshal Scheremetow.

THERE was an important fortrefs near the lake Ladoga, and not far from the river Neva, named Nyantz or Nya. It was of the utmolt importance to make himfelf mafter of this place, in order to fecure his conquefts, and favour his other defigns. As he was obliged to befiege the place both by fea and land, he fent therefore a number of fmall thips full of foldiers, to hinder the Swedes from fending any fuccours that way \ddagger . The citadel furrendered, and two Swedift veffels arrived too late to affift the

* March 30, 1703. + May 22. 1703.

befieged,

befieged, being both attacked and taken by the Czar. His journal observes, that as a reward for his fervice, "The captain of the bombardiers was created knight of the order of St. Andrew by admiral Golowin, the first knight of that order."

AFTER the taking the fort of Nya, he came to a refolution of building the city of Petersburg, at the mouth of the Neva, upon the gulph of Finland.

THE affairs of king Augustus were in a desperate way. The extraordinary victories of the Swedes in Poland had encouraged his enemies in the opposition, and even his friends had obliged him to difmifs a body of twenty thousand Russians that the Czar had fent him to reinforce his army. They thought by this facrifice to deprive the male. contents of all pretext for joining the king of Sweden : but enemies are difarmed by force, an appearance of weaknefs only making them more infolent. The twenty thousand men that had been disciplined by Patkul were of infinite fervice in Livonia and Ingria, while Augustus was losing his dominions. This reinforcement, and above all, the poffestion of Nya, enabled the Czar to found his new capital.

It was in this barren and marfhy fpot of ground, which communicates with the main land only by one way, that Peter laid the foundation of Peterfburg, in the fixtieth degree of latitude, and the torty-fourth and a half of longitude. The ruins of fome of the baffions of Nyantz were made ufe

or å

1612

10 56

emist

of Sm

120

ad be

end

ore 4

pundt

grout

onlyb

of Br

1. II

ufe of for the first slones of the foundation ‡. They began by building a finall fort upon one of the iflands, which is now in the center of the city. The Swedes beheld, without apprehension, a settlement on the midst of a morals, and inaccessible to vessels of burden; but in a very short time they faw the fortifications advanced, a town raised, and the little island of Cronstadt, fituate over against it, changed in 1704 into an impregnable fortres, under the cannon of which even the largest fleets may ride at anchor in fastey.

SUCH works as thefe, which feemed to require a time of the most profound peace, were carried on in the very middle of a war. Workmen of every fort were called together from Molcow. Aftracan, Cafan, and the Ukraine, to affift in building the new city. Neither the difficulties of the ground, that was to be drained and raifed, nor the diftance of materials, the unforeseen obstacles which are for ever flarting up in all great undertakings; nor, laftly, the mortality which carried off a prodigious number of workmen, could make the Royal Founder defift from this undertaking ; but, in the fpace of five months, a new city arofe from the ground. It is true, indeed, it was little better than a clufter of huts, with only two brick houses furrounded by ramparts; but this was all that was then needful. Time and perfeverance accomplished the reft. In lefs than five months after the founding of Petersburg, a Dutch ship

Petersburg was founded on Whitsunday, May 27. 1703. VOL. I. I came

came to trade there, the captain of which was abundantly rewarded ‡, and the Dutch foon found the way to Peterfburg.

WHILE Peter was directing the establishment of this colony, he took care to render it inacceffible to the enemy, by making himfelf mafter of the neighbouring pofts. A Swedish colonel, named Croniort, had taken post on the river Sestra, and thence threatened the growing city. Peter, without delay, marched against him with his two regiments of guards §, defeated him, and obliged him to repais the river. When he had thus provided for the fecurity of the town, he went to Olonitz, to give directions, for building a number of small veffels, and then returned to Petersburg *, on board a frigate that had been built by his diree. tion, taking with him fix transport veffels for prefent ufe, till the others could be finished. Even at this juncture he fent fuccours to the king of Poland +, viz. twelve thousand foot, and a fubfidy in money of three hundred thousand rubles, which make about one million five hundred thoufand French livres. It has been remarked, that his annual revenue did not exceed then five millions of rubles; by far too fmall a fum for the expence of his fleets, of his armies, and of his new establishments. He had fortified Novogorod, Plefkow, Kiow, Smolensko, Aloph, Archangel, and founded a capital. Yet he was still able to affit his ally with men and money. Cornelius le Bruin,

\$ Nov. 1703. \$ July 8. * Sep. † Nov.

a Dutchman,

23 1

DTH

制限

prove

12 11

山

rod B

ngeha

協

* Nov. 5. 1703.

a Dutchman, who was on his travels, and at that time in Ruffia, and with whom he frequently converfed very freely, as indeed he did with all ftrangers, fays, that the Czar himfelf affured him, that he had ftill three hundred thousand rubles remaining in his coffers, atter all the expences of the war were defrayed.

In order to fecure his infant city of Peterfburg against any infult, he went in perfon to found the depth of water thereabouts, fixed upon a place for building the fort of Cronstadt; and, after making the model of it in wood with his own hands, he employed prince Menzikoff to carry it into execution. From thence he fet out to pass the winter at Moscow, in order to establish, by degrees, the feveral alterations he had made in the laws, manners and customs of Russia *. He regulated the finances, and put them upon a respectable footing. He hastened the works that were carrying on in the Veronitz, and Afoph, and in an harbour which he had caused to be made on the Palus Mæotis, under the fort Taganrok.

THE Porte \dagger was alarmed at these preparations, and sent an embasily to the Czar to complain thereof: to which he returned for anfwer, that he was as much king in his own dominions as the Grand Signior was in Turky, and that it was no infringement of the peace, to render the Russian power respectable on the Euxine sea.

1 2

† Jan. 1704. UPON

174

UPON his return to Peterfburg 1, finding his new citadel of Cronstadt, which had been founded in the bosom of the fea, quite finished, he furnished it with compleat artillery. But in order to fettle himfelf firmly in Ingria, and entirely to deface the difgrace he had fuffered before Narva, he thought it neceffary to take that city. While he was making preparations for the fiege, a fmall fleet appeared on the lake Perpus, to oppose his defigns. The Ruffian half galleys came out to attack them, and took the whole iquadron, which had on board ninety eight pieces of cannon. After this victory, the Czar lays fiege to Narva both by fea and land, and which was most furprising, he lays fiege to the city of Derpt in Eftonia at the fame time. 6.

WHO would have imagined, that there was an univerfity in Derpt? Guftavus Adolphus had founded one there, but it did not make that city famous, Derpt being only known by thefe two fieges. Feter was continually going from one to the other, forwarding the attacks, and directing all the different operations. The Swedifh general Slippembac was in the neighbourhood of Derpt, with a body of two thoufand five hundred men.

THE befiegers expected every inftant when he would throw the fuccours into the place; but Peter, on this occasion, had recourse to a stratagem, worthy of frequent imitation. He ordered two regiments of foot, and one of horse, to be clothed in

‡ March 30.

§ April.

the

ng li

(h)

NZ

W

指

hit

RY.

: 111

r fan

285. I

當

Sit

The

hat

other

the fame uniform, and to carry the fame flandards and colours as the Swedes. Thefe fham Swedes attack the trenches, and the Ruffians pretend to be put to flight; the garrifon deceived by appearances, make a fally *; upon which the mock combatants join their forces, and fall upon the Swedes, one half of whom were left dead upon the fpot, and the reft made a fhift to get back to the town. Slippembac arrives foon after with fuccours to relieve it, but is intirely routed. At length Derpt was obliged to capitulate, juft as the Czar was preparing every thing for a general affault †.

AT the fame time, Peter met with a confiderable check on the fide of his new city of Petersburg; but this did not prevent him either from going on with the new building of that place, or from vigoroully profecuting the fiege of Narva. It has already been noticed, that he fent a reinforcement of troops and money to king Augustus, when his enemies were taking the throne from him; but those . aids proved of no fervice. The Ruffins having joined the Lithuanians who adhered to Augustus, were totally routed in Courland by the Swedifu general Lewenhaupt § : and had the conquerors directed their efforts towards Livonia, Effonia, and Ingria, they might have ruined the Czar's new works, and deftroyed all the fruits of his great enterprizes. Peter was every day undermining the out wall of Sweden, while Charles did not oppose

* June 27, 1704. † July 23. § July 31. I 3 him

him enough, for he fought a glory lefs uleful, though more brilliant.

A SWEDISH colonel on the twelfth of July 1704, at the head of a detachment, made the Polith nobility elect a new king, on the field of election, called Kolo, near Warfaw. The cardinal, primate of the kingdom, and feveral bifhops, fubmitted themfelves to a Lutheran prince, notwithflanding the threatenings and excommunications of the Pope. In fhort, every thing yielded to force. No body is ignorant in what manner Staniflaus Lerzinfky was elected king, and how Charles XII. obliged the greateft part of Poland to acknowledge him.

PETER abandoned not the dethroned king, he redoubled his fuccours in proportion to the loffes of his ally; and while his enemy made kings, he conquered the Swedifh generals one after another in Effonia and Ingria; he then went to the fiege of Narva, and attacked it valiantly. There were three baftions, famous at leaft for their names, called Victory, Honour, and Glory. The Czar carried them all three fword-in-hand. The befiegers entered into the city, which they plundered, and exercifed all those crucities, which were but too cuftomary at that time, between the Swedes and Ruffians.

PETER, on this occasion *, fet an example which ought to have gained him the hearts of his new fubjects. He ran every where in per-

· August 20, 1704.

fon,

177

dice

fon, to ftop the pillage and murder, fnatches feveral women out of the hands of the brutal foldiers, and, after having, with his own hand, flain two of those barbarians, who did not obey his orders, he enters the town house, whither the citizens had ran in crouds for sheiter, and laying his sword, yet smoaking with blood, upon the table, "This sword, faid he, is not stained with the blood of your fellow citizens, but with that of my own foldiers, which I have spilt to save your lives."

ps, li

DOT TO

s XILI

king.1

he in

r antis

the k

ere R

emes, o Czar u

beha

ered, a

enni

ia 12

4

Car -----

CHAP. XIV.

Peter the Great keeps posselfeffion of all Ingria, whils Charles XII triumph's elsewhere Rife of Menzikoff. Petersburg secured. The Gzar executes his designs notwithstanding the victories of the king of Sweden §.

The years 1704 and 1705.

PETER being now mafter of all Ingria, conferred the government of that province upon Menzikoff; and gave him the title of prince, and the rank of major general. The pride and preju-

§ All the foregoing chapters, and like wife those which follow, are taken from the journals of teter the Great and the papers fent me from Petersburg, carefully compared with other memorials.

dice of other countries might find fault with a paftry cook's boy being made a general, governor, and prince ; but Peter had already accustomed his fubjects not to be aftonifhed to fee every thing given to talents, and nothing given to noble birth alone. Menzikoff, by a lucky accident, had while a boy, been taken from his original obscurity, and placed in the Czar's family, where he learned feveral languages, and had made himfelf acquainted with bufinefs and arms; and having found means to ingratiate himfelf with his mafter, he afterwards knew how to render himfelf necessary. He greatly advanced the works at Petersburg, of which he had the direction : feveral brick and flone-houfes were already built, with an arfenal and magazines; the fortifications were completed, but the palaces were not built till fome time after.

As foon as Peter was fettled in Narva, he ordered frefh fuccours to the king of Poland, who had been lately dethroned. He promifed him a body of troops over and above the twelve thoufand men he had already fent him, and gave general Repnin orders to march ‡ from the frontiers of Lithuania, with fix thoufand horfe, and the fame number of foot. All this while he did not forget his colony of Peterfburg. The buildings went on very faft; his navy grew more numerous; feveral fhips and frigates were on the flocks at Olonitz; thefe he took care to fee finifh-

‡ August 19. 1704.

ed,

121

inty.

防盗

1122

TRE

2 272

bole

palas

hea

d, nt

W.P

諙

21

1位

ed ‡, and brought them himfelf into the harbour of Petersburg.

LVERY time he returned to Mofcow, he made triumphal entries. In this manner did he revisit his capital this year *, from whence he made only one excursion, to be present at the launching of his first ship of eighty guns upon the Veronitz of which he had drawn the dimensions the year before.

As foon as the weather would permit for opening the campaign in Poland, he haftened to join the army ¶, which he had fent to the affiltance of Auguitus, and were on the f ontiers of that kingdon; but while he was thus supporting his ally, a Swedish fleet put to fea to deltroy Petersburg, and the fortrefs of Cronftadt, as yet hardly finished. This fleet confitted of twenty two thips of war, from fifty tour to fixty-four guns, belides fix frigates, and two fire-fhips. The troops that were fent on this expedition, made a defcent on the little island of Kotin; but a Russian colonel, named Tolbogwin, who commanded a regiment there, ordered his foldiers to lie down flat on their bellies, while the Swedes were landing §; and then ordering them to run up fuddenly, they made to brilk and well directed a fire, that the Swedes were put into confusion, and forced to their ships, leaving behind them all their dead, and upwards of three hundsed prisoners.

THE fleet still continued hovering upon the

+ Oct. 11. * Dec. 30. ¶ May 1705. § June 27. 1705. I 5 coalt,

coaft, and threatened Peterfburg. They made another defcent, and were repulfed as before; a body of land forces were alfo advancing from Wiburg, under the command of the Swedifh general Meidel, and took their route by Shluffelburg *: this was the boldeft attempt Charles had yet made upon these territories, which Peter had either conquered or new formed. The Swedes were repulfed on every fide, and Peterfburg remained in fecurity.

THE Czar, on the other hand, marched towards Courland, defigning to penetrate as far as Riga. His plan was to make himfelf mafter of Livonia, while Charles XII. was bufied in reducing the Poles entirely under the obedience of the new king he had given them. Peter was fill at Wilnaw in Lithuania, and his general Scheremetow was approaching towards Mittau, the capital of Courland; but there he was met by Lewenhaupt, already famous by feveral victories; and a battle was fought between the two armies at a place called Gemavershoff, or Gemavers.

IN all those battles, where experience and difcipline decide the day, the Swedes, though inferior in number, had always the advantage. The Rufhans were totally defeated \ddagger , and lost all their artillery. Peter, notwithstanding the loss of three battles, at Gemavers, at Jacobstadt and at Narva,

• June 25.

‡ June 28.

always

always retrieved his loffes, and even converted them to his advantage.

YE

efore:

ng fm

ielban!

yet mi

ad di

WEEL

maineli

rchei t

23 12 i mater

10 18

ediene.

Peter 1

i gu

e was s veral t

i al

e 2011

uga B

ge. Il all th

1 Mat

21

AFTER the battle of Gemavers, he marched a numerous army into Courland; came before Mittau, made himfelf mafter of the town, and afterwards laid fiege to the capital, which was taken by capitulation.

THE Ruffian troops were blamed at that time for diffinguithing their fucceffes + by rapine and plunder; a practice of too great antiquity in all nations. But Peter, at the taking of Narva, had made fuch changes in this cuftom, that the Ruffian foldiers, appointed to guard the vaults, where the grand dukes of Courland were buired, in the caffle of Mittau, perceiving that the bodies had been taken out of their tombs, and fiript of their ornaments, refufed to take poffeffion of their poff, till a Swedith colonel had been firft fent for to infpect the condition of the place, who gave them a certificate that this outrage had been committed by the Swedes.

A RUMOUR which was fpread throughout the whole empire, that the CZar had been totally deleated at the battle of Gemavers, proved of greater prejudice to his affairs, than even the loss of that battle. The remainder of the ancient Strelitzes in garrifon at Affracan, emboldened by this false report, mutinied, and murdered the governor of the town. Peter was obliged to fend marthal Scheremetow with a body of

> † Sept. 14. 1705. I 6

forces

forces to quell the infurrection, and punish the ringleaders.

1

THE Czar at this time feemed in a critical fituation. The fuccels and valour of Charles XII: the misfortunes of Augustus; the forced neutrality of Denmark; the infurrection of the ancient Strelitzes; the murmurs of a people, fenfible of the reflraint, but not of the utility of the late reformation; the discontent of the grandees, who found themfelves fubjected to military discipline; and laftly, the exhausted state of the revenue, were sufficient to have dispirited any prince but Peter: yet he did not despond even for an inflant. He foon quelled the revolt, and having provided for the fafety of Ingria, and fecured the possession of the citadel of Mittau, in spite of the victorious Lewenhaupt, who had not troops enough to oppose him; he found himself at lis berty to march an army through Samogitia and Lithuania.

PETER now partook of the fame glory with Charles XII and gave laws to Poland. He advanced as far as likoczin; where he had an interview for the fecond time with king Auguftus; and he confoled with him in his misfortunes, promifing to avenge his caufe, and at the fame time made him a pretent of fome colours, which Menzikoff had taken from the troops of his rival. They afterwards went towards Grodno, the capital of Lithuania, and flaid there till the fifteenth of December. At their parting, Peter gave him both men and money, and, according

to his usual custom, went to pass some time of the winter at Moscow †, to make the arts and laws flourish there, after having made a very difficult campaign.

住住

itth)

6.11

cipla

21

has

fpilt

IT T

Bal

12

朝泽

pin

ne th

計

s m

計開

CHAP. XV.

While Peter is frengthening his conquests, and improving his dominions, his enemy Charles XII. gains several battles . gives laws to Poland and Saxony. Augustus, notwithstanding a victory gained by the Russians, receives laws from Charles XII. Augustus renounces the crown, and delivers up Patkul the Czar's amhassador. Murder of Patkul, who is condemned to be broke upon the wheel

The year 1706.

PETER was hardly come back to Molcow, when he was informed that Charles XII. after being every where victorious, was advancing towards Grodno, to attack the Ruffian troops. King Augustus had been obliged to fly from Grodno, and retire in haste towards Saxony, with four regiments of Ruffian dragoons: a step which both weakened and difcouraged the army of his protector. The Czar found all the roads

+ Dec, 30. 1705.

183

to

to Grodno occupied by the Swedes, and his troops disperfed.

WHILE he was affembling his troops in Lithuania, with great difficulty, the famons Schulemburg, who was the laft refource of Augustus, and who afterwards acquired fo much glory by the defence of Cortu against the Furks, advanced on the fide of Great Poland, with about twelve thousand Saxons, and fix thousand Ruffians, taken from the troops which the Czar had truffed with this unfortunate prince. Schulemburg expected, with fome reason, that he would be able to fave Augustus from being ruined : he faw that Charles XII. was fully employed in Lithuania, and that there were only a body of ten thousand Swedes under general Renfchild who would interrupt his march. He thereupon advanced with confidence to the frontiers of Silefia; which is the paffage from Saxony into Upper Poland. When he was near the village of Fraufladt, on the frontiers of that kingdom, he met marthal Renfchild, who was coming to give him battle.

NOTWITHSTANDING the care I take to avoid repeating what has been already mentioned in the hiftory of Charles XII. I am obliged in this place to take notice once more, that there was in the Saxon army a French regiment, that had been taken prifoners at the famous battle of Hochflet, and obliged to ferve in the Saxon troops. My memoirs inform me, that this regiment had the charge of the artillery, and add, that the French, being admirers of the fame and reputation of Charles XII. and

and difcontented with the Saxon fervice, laid down their arms as foon as they came in fight of the enemy t, and defired to be taken into the Swedifb army, in which they continued to the end of the war. This detertion was a fignal of a total overthrow to the Ruffian army, of which no more than three battalions were faved, and almost every man of thele were wounded; and as no quarter was granted, the remainder were all killed.

and h

Lito

take

andm

defen the le

ifant 5

ron à

職能

XILL

er gete

rch b

m Sar

ar the i

101

bett 1

ment

15

NORBERG the chaplain pretends, that the Swedifh word at this battle was, "In the name of God," and that of the Ruffians, "Kill all;" but it was the Swedes who killed all in the name of God The Czar himfelf declares in one of his manifestoes 1, that a number of Ruffian Coffacks and Calmucks, that had been made prifoners, were murdered in cool blood three days after the battle. The irregular troops on both fides had accuftomed their generals to thefe cruelties, than which greater were never committed in the moft barbarous times. I had the honour to hear king Staniflaus himfelf fay, that in one of those engagements, which were fo frequent in Poland, a Ruffian office, who had formerly been one of his triends, came to put himfelf under his pro-· tection, after the defeat of the corps which he commanded; and that the Swedish general Steinbok fhot him dead with a pittol, while he held him in hisarm

† Feb. 6. 1706. ‡ The Czar's manifelto in the Ukraine. THE

THE Ruffians had now loft four pitched battles with the Swedes, without reckoning the other victories of Charles XII. in Poland. The Czar's troops that were in Grodno were in danger of greater difgrace, by being furrounded on all fides; but he fortunately found means to get them together, and even to ft engthen them with new reinforcements. Being obliged to provide for the fafety of his army, and the fecurity of his conquefts in Ingria, he ordered prince Menzikoff to march with the army under his command cattward, and from thence fouthward as far as Kiow.

WHILE his men were upon their march, he repairs to Shluffelburg. from thence to Narva, and to his colony or Peterfburg ‡, and puts those places in a posture of defence. From the Baltic he flies to the banks of the Bouilthenes, to march into Poland by the way of Kiow, making it ftill his conftant endeavour to render those victories of Charles, which he had not been able to prevent, of as little advantage to the victor as poffible. At this very time he meditated a new co: quest; namely, that of Wiburg, the capital of Carelia, fituated on the gulph of Finland. He went to befiege this place, but it withftood the power of his arms *; fuccours arrived in feafon, and he was obliged to raife the fiege. His rival Charles XII. did not really make any conquefts, though he gained to many battles : he purfued king Augustus into Sax. ony, being always more intent upon cruthing that

\$ Ang. 1706.

* Oct. 1706. prince 當

10

1

2

W

凿

間

1

i

h

I

k

prince beneath the weight of his fuperior power and reputation, than upon recovering Ingria, that had been wrefted from him by a vanquithed enemy.

d the

the n

K Stre

ether

officient

21011

not in

narchi

ama

okm

c heb

All

100

fai

協

都副

ng ti

prist

CHARLES fpread terror through all Upper Poland, Silefia, and Saxony. King Auguftus's whole family, his mother, his wife, his fon, and the principal nobility of the country, were retired into the heart of the empire. Auguftus now fued for peace, chufing rather to truft himfelf to the clemency of his conqueror, than to the arms of his protector. He negociated a treaty, which ftript him of his crown, and covered him at the fame time with difgrace. This was a fecret treaty, and was to be concealed from the Czar's generals, with whom he had taken retuge in Poland, while Charles XII. was giving laws in Leipfic, and reigned abiolute fovereign throughout his electorate.

His plenipotentiaries had already figned the fatal convention, by which he not only divefted himfelf of the crown of Poland, but promifed never more to affume the title of king § at the fame time he recognized Staniflaus, renounced his alliance with the Czar his benefactor, and, to compleat his humiliation, engaged to deliver up to Charles XII. John Renold Patkul, the Czar's ambaffador and general in the Ruffian fervice, who was then actually fighting his caufe. He had fome time before ordered Patkul to be arrefted, contrary to the law of

§ Sep. 14. 1706.

nations,

188

nations, upon falfe fufpicions; and now, in direct violation of thefe laws, he delivered him up to his enemy. It had been more to his credit to have died fword-in hand, than to have concluded fuch a treaty: a treaty which not only robbed him of his crown, and of his character; but likewife endangered his liberty, becaufe he was at that time in the power of prince Menzikoff in Pofnania, and the few Saxons that were with him were paid by the Ruffians.

PRINCE Menzikoff was oppofed in that diftrict by a Swedifh army, reinforced with a firong party of Poles, in the intereft of the new king Staniflaus, under the command of general Maderfeld; and not knowing that Auguflus had engaged in a treaty with the enemies of Ruffi, had propofed to attack them; and Auguflus did not dare to refufe. The battle was fought near Kaliffi, in the palatinate belonging to Staniflaus †. This was the first pitched battle the Ruffians had gained againft the bwedes. Prince Menzikoff had all the glory of the action; four thoufand of the enemy were left dead on the field, and two thoufand five hundred and ninetyeight were taken prifoners.

IT is difficult to think how Augustus could be prevailed on, after this battle, to ratify a treaty which deprived him of all the benefit of his victory. But Charles was triumphant in Saxony, where his very name intimidated his enemies. The fuccels of the Buffians appeared to inconfiderable, and the Polih

+ Oct. 19.

party

許

-

1017

」就

Ma

239

3R

01

18 (加

) ba

Daily

「三川

2111

1 2

DVE.

20

10

party against Augustus was fo ill-advised, that he figned that fatal convention. Neither did he ftop here: he wrote to his envoy Finkltein a letter, that was if poffible more (hameful than the treaty itfelf; for therein he asked pardon for having obtained a victory, " protesting, that the battle had been fought against his will; that the Russians, and the Poles his adherents, had obliged him to it; that he had, with a view of preventing it, actually made fome movements to abandon Menzikoff , that Maderfeld might have beaten him, had he made the most of that opportunity; that he was ready to rettore all the Swedish prisoners, or to break with the Russians; and that, in fine, he would give the king of Sweden all manner of fatisfaction," for having dared to beat his troops.

THIS whole affair is firicily true, however firange and furprizing it may appear. When we reflect, that, with all this weaknefs, Augustus was one of the bravest princes in turope; we may plainly perceive, that the loss or prefervation, the rite or decline of empires, are entirely owing to a becoming firmness of mind.

THERE were two other circumftances concurred to compleat the misfortunes of the king of Poland elector of Saxony, and fhew the abute which Charles XII. made of his good fortune. The first was his obliging Augustus to write a letter of congratulation to the new king Staniflaus: the fecond was terrible; he even compelled Augustus to deliver up Patkul, the Czar's ambasilador and general. It is fufficiently known to all Europe, the

100

that this minister was afterwards broke upon the wheel at Calimir, in the month of September 1707. Norberg the chaplain confessions that the orders for his execution were all written in Charles's own hand.

l'HERE is not a civilian in all Europe, nay even the vilest flave, but must feel the whole horror of this barbarous injustice. The first crime of this unfortunate man was, his having made an humble reprefentation of the rights and privileges of his country, at the head of fix Livonian gentlemen, who were fent as deputies from the whole province : he was condemned to die for fulfilling the first of duties, that of ferving his country agreeable to her laws. This iniquitous fentence put him in full poffeffion of a right, which all mankind derive from nature, that of chusing his country. As he was ambaffador to one of the greatest monarchs in the univerfe, his perfon ought to have been facred On this occasion, the law of nature and nations was violated by the laws of force. The fplendor of glory formerly covered fuch barbarities, but at prefent they put a lafting fain and reproach on military glory.

CHAP.

割

1

湖

今 我 是 我 我 是 是 我 是 是 来 我 是 是 化 来 我 是 是 化 来 我 是 是 化

pont

DATE

horne

101,1

vince:1

Brine

s bei

chsin

Cret

的項

10 10

CHAP. XVI.

A defign to fet up a third king in Poland Charles XII. fets out from Saxony with a flourishing army, and paffes through Poland like a conqueror. Cruelties exercifed. Conduct of the Czar. Succeffes of Charles XII. who at length advances towards Russia.

The year 1707 and 1708.

CHARLES XII. enjoyed at Altranstadt, near Leipfic, the fruits of his victories; the protestant princes of the German empire flocking in crouds to pay homage to him, and beg his protection. He received ambassadors from almoss all the potentates of Europe. The emperor Joseph implicitly followed his directions. Peter then feeing that king Augustus had renounced his protection, and the Polish crown, and that a part of the nation had acknowledged Stanislaus, listened to the proposals made him by Yolkova, of electing a third king.

SEVERAL palatines were proposed at the diet of Lublin, and prince Ragotski, who was long kept in prison in his youth by the emperor Leopold, and was his competitor for the throne of Hungary, was put on the lift.

THIS negotiation was carried very far, and Poland

land was on the point of having three kings at one time. Prince Ragotiki not fucceeding, Peter thought to beflow the crown on Siniauski, grand general of the republic; a man of great power and interest, and head of a third party, that would neither acknowledge the dethroned king, nor the perfon elected by the other faction.

調

拉,向

前

「「二」

一型一部電

「「「「「「」」「「」」」

100

AMONGST all thole troubles, there was a rumour of peace. Beffeval the French envoy to the court of Saxony interpofed, to bring about a reconciliation between Peter and the king of Sweden. The court of France were of opinion, that Charles, having no longer either the Ruffians or Poles to fight againft, might turn his arms againft the emperor Jofeph, who had difobliged him, and on whom he had even impofed feveral hard terms during his flay in Saxony. But Charles made anfwer, that he would treat with the Czar in the city of Mofcow. It was on this occafion that Peter faid, "My brother Charles wants to act the Alexander, but he fhall not find a Darius in me"

THE Ruffians however fill continued in Poland, and were in the city of Warfaw, while the king whom Charles XII. had fet over the Poles was fearcely acknowledged by that nation. In the mean time, Charles was enriching his army with the fpoils of Saxony.

AT length he began his march from Altranftadt ‡, with an army of forty five thousand men; a force which it feemed impossible for the Czar to make

\$ Aug. 22. 1707.

make head against, feeing he had been entirely defeated by eight thousand Swedes at Narva.

20

neali

intere

stint

78 1÷

OTID

of Sm

in.s

mite

e"

個

vith I

(m)

22

It was in paffing by the walls of Drefden §, that Charles made that very extraordinary vifit to king Augustus, which, as Norberg fays, " will firike posterity with admiration." It was running a furprising rifk, to put himfelf in the power of a prince whom he had deprived of his kingdom. From this place he continued his march through Silesia, and re-entered Poland.

THIS kingdom had been quite ravaged by war, ruined by factions, and over-run with all forts of miferies. Charles continued advancing with his army through the province of Maffovia, and took the worlt ways it was poffible for any perfon to chuse. The inhabitants had taken shelter in the moraffes, and were refolved to make him pay dear for his paffage. Six thousand peafants dispatched an old man of their body to fpeak to him; this man, who was of a very extraordinary fize and figure, clad in white, and armed with two carabines, addreffed Charles; but as those who were in company with Charles did not very well understand what he faid, they immediately killed him in the midft of his discourse, before the king's face. The peafants, highly provoked, immediately took up The Swedes purfued them, and all they arms. took they obliged to hang one another; the laft was compelled to put the rope about his own neck himself, and to be his own executioner. All their houles

§ Aug. 27.

houses were burnt to the ground. This fact is fully attested by Norberg, who was an eye witness, and therefore cannot be contradicted, which must shock every one with horror who reads it.

CHARLES being arrived within a few leagues of Grodno in Lithuania 1, received intelligence of the Czar's being there in perfon with a body of troops; upon which, without any deliberation, he takes only eight hundred ot his guards, and fets out for Grodno. A German officer, named Multels, who commanded a body of troops, posted at one of the gates of the town, supposing when he faw Charles, that he was followed by his whole army, inflead of difputing the paffage with him, leaves the gate open, and runs away. The alarm being now fpread through the whole town, every perfon thought the whole Swedish army already entered; the few Ruffians who made refistance were killed by the Swedish guards; and all the officers inform the Czar, that the victorious army were become mallers of the place. Upon this Peter retreats behind the ramparts, and Charles plants a guard of thirty men at the gate through which the Czar had just before entered.

10

In this confusion, some of the fathers belonging to the Jesuits college where Charles lodged, went in the night, and informed the Czar of the whole truth. Upon which, Peter returns into the town, and forces the Swedish guards. An engagement ensured in the fireets, but the whole Swedish army appearing

‡ Fcb. 6. 1708.

appearing in fight, the Czar is obliged to yield to fuperior numbers, and leaves the town in the hands of the victor, who filled all Poland with confiernation.

i fa

WIEM

ich ni

he hi

ts out

one di

v Chal

y, int

s the p

ow for

the

: 11

ie mat

, setti

ie obl

genti

peani

CHARLES had augmented his forces in Livonia and Finland, and Peter had good reason to be afraid, not only for his conquefts on this fide, but alfo for those on the fide of Lithuania, alfo for his ancient territories, and even the city of Mofcow itfelf. It was therefore necessary for him to provide for the fecurity of all these places, which lay at such a diftance from one another. Charles could not make any rapid conquefts to the eaftward of Lithuania in the depth of winter, and in a marfly country, subject to epidemical diforders, which had increased by poverty and famine from Warfaw as far as Minski. Peter polled his troops to command all the paffes of the rivers, guarded all the important posts, and did everything in his power to hinder the marches of his enemy +, and afterwards haftened to put all things in a proper flate of defence at Petersburg.

THOUGH Charles was victorious in Poland, he took nothing from the Czar; but Peter, by employing his new fleet, in landing his forces in Finland, by the taking and difmantling the town of Borgau, and by taking a confiderable booty 4, procured many real advantages to himfelf, and greatly diffreffed his enemy.

CONTINUAL rains kept Charles a long time in

† April 8, 1708, 4 May 22. Vol. I. K

Lithuania,

Lithuania, but he at length reached the little river of. Berezine, a few leagues from the Borifthenes. Nothing could withftand his victorious arm; he immediately threw a bridge over the river in fight of the Ruffians; beat the detachment that guarded the paffage, and got to Holozin on the Wabis, where the Czar had posted a confiderable body of men to check the impetuous progrefs of the Swedes. The little river of Bibitsch is only a brook in dry weather; but at this time it was fwelled by the rains to a deep and rapid fream. On the other fide was a morafs, behind which the Ruffians had thrown up an intrenchment for above a quarter of a league, defended by a large and deep ditch, and covered by a parapet lined with artillery. Nine regiments of horfe, and eleven of foot, were advantageously posted in these lines, fo that the paffage of the river feemed very dangerous, if not impracticable.

10

10

- Martin

の利用

4

HE

THE Swedes, according to the cultom of war, got ready their pontons, and erected batteries to favour their paffage; but Charles, whole impatience to engage would not let him brook the leaft delay, did not wait till the pontons were ready. Marthal Schwerin, who fetved a long time under him, has affured me feveral times, that one day as they were about to engage, obferving his generals to be very bufy in concerting the neceffary difpolitions, faid tartly to them, "When will you be done with trifling?" and immediately advanced in perfon at the head of his guards, which he did particularly on this memorable day.

0205

n; k

uartel

Swela

bys

UZITET E

were p the p

n cí ti

Mai

THE

HE threw himfelf into the river, followed by hi⁸ regiment of guards. Their numbers broke the impetuofity of the fiream, but the water was as high as their fhoulders, and they could make no ufe of their firelocks. Had the artillery of the parapet been but tolerably well ferved, or had the infantry but levelled their pieces in a proper manner, not a fingle Swede would have efcaped.

THE king, after wading the river ¶, pafied the morafs on foot. As foon as the army had furmounted thefe obflacles within fight of the Ruffians, they drew up in order of battle, and attacked the Ruffian entrenchments feven times, and it was not till the feventh attack that the Ruffians gave way. By the accounts of Swedith hittorians, they took but twelve field pieces, and twenty four mortars.

It was therefore now plain, that the Czar had at laft fucceeded in difciplining his troops, and this victory of Holozin, though it added to Charles's glory, might have made him fenfible of the many dangers he must expect to meet with in adventuring into fuch diftant countries, where his army could only advance in fmall bodies, through woods, moraffes, and where he would be obliged to fight every flep of his way; but the Swedes, being accultomed to victory, neither were afraid of danger nor fatigue.

¶ July 25. 1708,

K 2

CHAP.

Contraction of the second account of the second sec

CHAP. XVII.

Charles XII croffes the Borishhenes, penetrates into the Ukraine, but does not concert his measures properly One of his armies is defeated by Peter the Great: he loses his supply of provisions and ammunition: advances forward through a desert country. His adventures on the Ukraine.

The year 1708.

HARLES had now arrived on the banks of A the Borifthenes, at a small town called Mohilow. This was the important place where he was determined whether he fould direct bis march eaftward towards Molcow, or fouthward towards the Ukraine His army, his friends, his enemies, all expected that he would direct his course immediately for the capital of Ruffia. Whatever way he took, Peter was following him from Smolensko with a numerous army. No one expected that he would march towards the Ukraine He was induced to take this frange refolution by Mazeppa, herman of the Coffacks, an old man of feventy, and without children, who ought to have thought only of ending his days in peace and quiet : a fente of gratitude thould have tied him to the Czar, to whom he was indebted for his prefent greatnefs ; but whether he had any real caufe of complaint against that prince, OF

100

te 'a

wahm

hill

with

rought

ed Ma

mil

toward

int

WAR

komi

ROL

1250

ilan i

endial

ie sa

or that he was overcome with the luftre of Charles's exploits, or whether, in time, he thought to make himfelf independent, he betrayed his benefactor, and entered into a confpiracy with the king of Sweden, flattering himfelf with the hopes of the whole nation of Coffacks joining him in rebellion.

CHARLES made not the leaft doubt of fubduing the Ruffian empire, as foon as his troops should be joined by fo warlike a people as the Coffacks. Mazeppa was to furnish him with what provisions, ammunition, and artillery he ftood in need of. Befides these powerful fuccours, he was to be joined by an army of fixteen or feventeen thousand men out of Livonia, under the command of general Lewenhaupht, who was to bring with him a prodigious quantity of warlike ftores and provisions. Charles did not allow himfelf to think whether the Czar was within reach of attacking his army, and robbing him of thefe neceffary supplies. He never informed himfelf whether Mazeppa was in a condition to observe his promises; if he had credit e. nough to gain over a whole nation, who are generally ruled only by their own opinion ; or whether his army was provided with fufficient refources in cafe of an accident; but imagined, if Mazeppa fhould prove deficient in abilities or fidelity, he might depend entirely upon the bravery of histroops and good fortune. His army then advanced beyond the Borifthenes towards the Defna : it was between these two rivers that he expected to meet Many difficulties, as bad roads, with Mazeppa. and

K 3

200

and fkirmishing parties of the Russians, made his march very disagreeable.

MENZICOFF, at the head of fome horfe and foot §, attacked the king's advanced guard, threw them into diforder, and killed a number of his men. He loft a greater number of his own, but that did not difcourage him. Charles immediately haftened to the field of battle, and with fome difficulty repulfed the Rufhans, at the hazard of his own life, by engaging a party of dragoons, by whom he was furrounded. All this while Mazeppa did not arrive, and provisions began to grow fearce. The Swedifh foldiers were not difpirited, feeing their king fhare with them in all their dangers, fatigues, and wants; but though they admired his courage, they could not refrain from being difpleafed with his conduct.

THE orders which the king had fent to Lewenhaupt to march with all hafte, to join him with the neceffary fupplies, were retarded twelve days in their journey. This was a great lofs as circumflances then flood. However, Lewenhaupt at laft began his march Peter allowed him to pals the Borifthenes; but as foon as his army was got between that river and the fmaller ones, which empty themfelves into it, he forded it after him, and attacked him with his united forces, which had followed in different corps at equal diffances from one another. This battle was fought between the Borifthenes and the Soffa ‡.

PRINCE

I

1

2

§ Sept. 11. 1708. ‡ In the Ruffian language Soeza.

foot

, 1

ned y

100

理論

ann

Swell

ig be

WIE;

y coul

is cre

Lever

with

dats 1

CHOR

t at at

28 8

got by

head

and at

ad for

面似

he Br

RINCI

PRINCE Menzikoff was upon his return with the fame body of horfe, with which he had lately engaged Charles XII. General Baur followed him, and the Czar himfelf headed the flower of his army. The Swedes imagined they had to deal with an army of forty thou(and men, and this was believed for a long time: but my late memoirs inform me, that Peter had no more than twenty thoufand in that day's memorable battle, a number not much fuperior to that of the Swedes: but his vigour, his patience, his unwearied perfeverance, together with that of his troops, animated by his prefence, decided the fortune, not of that day only, but of the three fucceflive days, during which the battle was renewed at different times.

THE Ruffians attacked first the rear of the Swedifh army, near the village of Lefnau, from whence this battle borrows its name. This first shock was bloody, without proving decifive §. Lewenhaupt retreated into a wood, and thereby faved his baggage. The next morning, when the Swedes were to be driven from the wood, the action was still more bloody, and more to the advantage of the Ruffians. Here it was that the Czar, feeing his troops in diforder, cried out to the rear-guard to fire upon the runaways, and even upon himfelf, if they faw him retreat cowardly. The Swedes were repulfed, but not thrown into confusion.

AT length a reinforcement of four thousand dragoons arriving, he fell upon the Swedes a third K 4 time,

202

time, who retreated to a fmall town called Profpock, where they were again attacked; they then marched towards the Defna, the Ruffians ftill purfuing them; yet they were never broken, but loft upwards of eight thoufand men, feventeen pieces of cannon, and forty four colours : the Czar took fifty-fix-officers, and near nine hundred private men prifoners, and the great convoy of provisions and ammunition that were defigned for Charles's army, fell into the hands of the conqueror.

能

8

10

10

a

11

1

1

THIS was the first time that the Czar in perfon gained a pitched battle against an enemy who had diffinguished themselves by so many victories over his army; he proclaimed a general thanksgiving for hi victories, upon hearing that general Apraxin had gained an advantage in Ingria ‡, near Narva; an advantage which was not so great as that of Lefnau; but this concurrence of fortunate events greatly raised the hopes and courage of his troops.

CHARLES received this terrible news just as he was ready to pass the Defna in the Ukraine. Mazeppa now joined him; but instead of twenty thoufand men, and an immense quantity of provisions, which he was to have brought with him, he came with only two regiments, and appeared rather like a traitor applying for allistance, than a prince, who was bringing powerful fuccours to his ally. This Coffack had indeed begun his march with near fixteen thousand of his people, whom he made believe at their first fetting out, that they were going against

gainst the king of Sweden ; that they would have the glory of ftopping that hero on this march, and that Peter would be eternally obliged to them for fo great a fervice.

port

luine

ta

C25 0

e mer

15 2

2006

perin

10 14

is in ingh

prati

Nam:

oi Ló triti

10001

1 28 1

. We

y the

ribers,

e cani

erlik

e, W

The

eler

inge

gaint

Bur when they arrived near the Defna, he told his real defign. Thefe generous people received his propofal with indignation : they refused to betray a monarch, against whom they had no caufe of complaint, for the fake of a Swede, who had invaded their country, and who, after leaving it, would be no longer able to defend them, but mult abandon them to the fu y of the incenfed Ruffians, and of the Poles, once their mafters, and always their enemies: they accordingly returned home, and gave advice to the Czar of the defection of their chief. Maz ppa found himfelf left with only two regiments, the officers of which were in his own pay.

HE was still master of fome strong fortreffes in the Ukraine, and in particular of Bathurin, the place of his refidence, looked upon as the capital of the Coffacks : it is fituated near fome foreits on the Delna, at a great diftance from the place where Peter had defeated general Lewenhaupt. There were always some Russian regiments quartered in these parts. The Czar detached prince Menzikoff, who got thither by round about marches. Charles could not fecure all the paffes; he did not to much as know them all, and had neglected to make him. felf malter of the important post of the Starowdoub, which leads directly to Bathurin, across a foreft of feven or eight leagues, through which the Defna K 5 takes

204

takes its courfe Peter had always the advantage of him, by their better knowledge of the country.

MENZICOFF and the prince Galitzin, who had accompanied him, eafily made their paffage good ‡, and prefented themfelves before the town of Bathurin, which furrendered almost without refist. ance, was plundered and reduced to afhes. The Ruffians made themfelves mafters of a large magazine deflined for the ufe of the king of Sweden, and of all Mazeppa's treasures. The Coffacks chose another hetman, named Skoropafky, who was approved by the Czar, and to make the people more fenfible of the enormous crime of treafon, by a firiking example of juffice, the archbifhop of Kiow 6, and two other prelates, were ordered to excommunicate Mazeppa publicly ; after which he was hanged in effigy, and fome of his accomplices were broken upon the wheel.

CHARLES XII. notwithftanding thefe loffes, was flill at the head of about twenty-five or twenty-feven thousand Swedes, who were joined by the remains of Lewenhaupt's army, and the addition of between two and three thousand men, whom Mazeppa had brought with him, and fill infatuated with the fame mistaken opinion of all the Ukraine declaring for him, passed the Defna *, at fome diflance from Bathurin, and near the Borsthenes, notwithstanding he was environed with the Czar's troops; part of whom purfued the rear of his army, while another part lined the opposite fide of the river to oppose his passe.

\$ Nov. 14. 1708. \$ Nov. 22.

* Nov. 25, 1708,

HE

1

1

「「「

10

ń

h

R

20122

intr.

ho hi

gooli

e mp

Sweden

123

m, br:

Kim

(0000)

verehe

restra

r the p

5 21E

rol.

HE purfued his march through a defert country, the villages being all deftroyed and burnt. The cold was fo prodigioufly piercing at the beginning of December, that in one of his marches, near two thoufand of his men perifhed before his eyes; Peter's troops did not fuffer fo much, being better fupplied with cloaths and other neceffaries, whereas Charles's army, being almost naked, was more exposed to the inelemency of the weather.

In this deplorable fituation, count Piper, Charles's chanceller, who always gave his mafter good advice, conjured him to halt, and pals at least the feverest part of the winter in a fmall town of the Ukraine, called Romna, where he might entrench himfelf, and get fome provisions by the help of Mazeppa; but Charles replied, that " it was below his dignity to thut himfelf up in a town." Piper then intreated him to repais the Defna and the Borifthenes, to return back into Poland, to put his troops into winter-quarters, of which they flood fo much in need, to make use of the Polish cavalry, which was abfolutely neceffary, to support the king he had raifed to the crown, and to awe the partifans of Augultus, who began already to raife their drooping heads. Charles answered him again, " that this would be flying before the Czar, that the feation would grow milder, and that he must reduce the Ukraine, and march on to Mofcow."

Вотн armies remained fome weeks inactive §, К б on † This is acknowledged by the chaplain Norberg, tom. 11. р. 263.

§ January : 709.

on account of the cold, in the month of January 1709; but, as foon as the troops were able to make use of their arms, Charles attacked all the fmall posts that he found in his way. He was obliged to fend parties on every fide in fearch of provisions ; that is to fay, to fcour the country twenty leagues round, and rob all the peafants of their neceffary fubfistence. Peter, with great compofure, kept a ftrict eye upon all his motions, and fuffered the Swedish army to moulder away by de-Salasta and seaso assessed a sufficient and grees.

it

勃

14

IT is impossible for the reader to trace the Swedes in their march through these defolate countries ; feveral of the rivers which they croffed are not to be found in maps : we must not fuppofe, that geographers are as well acquainted with these countries, as we are with Italy, France, and Germany. Geography is, of all the liberal arts, that which fill flands the most in need of improvement; and the ambition of princes has hitherto been at more pains in defolating the face of the globe, than in giving a defcription of it.

WE must content ourfelves then with knowing, that Charles croffed the Ukraine in the month of February, burning all the villages where-ever he came, that had not been laid in afhes by the Ruffians. He, advancing fouth eaft, came to those fandy deferts, bordered by mountains, that separate the Nogay Fartars from the Coffacks. To the eaflward of these mountains, are the altars of Alexan. der. Charles was now on the other fide of the Ukraine, in the road that the Tartars take to Ruffia; and

and when he penetrated thus far, he was obliged to return back again to procure fublitence : the inhabitants, having retired with all their cattle into their dens and lurking places, would fometimes defend their fublitence against the foldiers, who came to deprive them of it. Such of thefe poor wretches who could be found, were put to death, agreeable to what are failly called the rights of war I cannot here forbear transcribing a few lines from Norberg. "As an instance, fays he, of the king's regard to justice, I shall infert a note, which he wrote with his own hand to colonel Heilmen."

" Colonel,

antin

W25 01

archo

21 000

ns, ail

bra

defeizz

luppoie

mprovis

10TH

wei li

水如

eparas

e cali

K

" I AM very well pleafed that you have taken thefe peafants, who carried off a Swedith foldier. As foon as they are convicted of the crime, let them be punished with death, according to the exigency of the cafe.

CHARLES, and lower down, BUDIS." SUCH are the featiments of juffice and humanity fhewn by a king's conteffor, but had the peafants of the Ukraine had it in their power to hang the regimented peafants of Eaft Gothland, who thought they had a sight to come fo far to plunter them, their wives, and families, would not the confeffors and chaplains of these Ukrainers have had equal rea on to extol their juffice?

MAZEPPA had, for a confiderable time, been in treaty with the Zaporavians, who live about the two fhores of the Borithenes, and of whom part inhabit the iflands fituated on that river. It is this division that forms the nation, of whom mention has

it

To I

鶅

11

121

Ŧĉ

赤

Ŵ

ti

has already been made in the first chapter of this history, and who having neither wives nor families, fubfist entirely by robbery During the winter they heap up provisions in their islands, which they afterwards go and fell in the fummer, in the little town of Pultowa; the reft dwell in fmall hamlets, to the right and left of this river. They all together chufe a particular hetman, and this hetman is fubordinate to him of the Ukraine. The perfon at that time at the head of the Zaporavians had an interview with Mazeppa; and thefe two barbarians had each of them an horfe's tail and a club born before him, as enfigns of honour.

In order to fliew what this hetman of the Zaporavians, and his fubjects, were; I think it not unworthy of history, to relate the manner in which this treaty was concluded. Mazeppa gave a great feast to the hetman of the Zaporavians, and his principal officers, who were all ferved in plate. As foon as these chiefs had made themselves drunk with brandy, they took an oath (without flirring from the table) upon the evangelist, to fupply Charles with men and provisions; after which they carried off all the plate and other table-furniture. Mazeppa's fleward ran after them, and remonstrated, that fuch behaviour ill-fuited with the doctrine of the gospels on which they had fo lately fworn. Some of Mazeppa's domeflicks were for taking the plate away by force ; but the Zaporavians went in a body to complain to Mazeppa, of the unparalleled affront offered to fuch brave fellows, and demand. ed to have the fleward delivered up to them, that they

they might punish him according to law. This was accordingly complied with, and the Zaporavians, according to law, toffed this poor man from one to another like a foot-ball, and afterwards plunged a knife into his heart.

ftis

milis

t the

e tom

ogethe

in the

語作

the L

Will

2 91

206 2

fin

100

四四

nitt

Aral

trinea

fett

ingit

alky mail

, m

SUCH were the new allies that Charles XII. was obliged to receive, part of whom he formed into a regiment of two thousand men; the remainder marched in separate bodies against the Coffacks and Calmucks of the Czar's party, that were stationed about that district.

HE little town of Pultowa, with which those Zaporavians carry on a trade, abounded with provisions, and might have ferved Charles for a place of arms. It is fituated on the river Workflaw, near a chain of mountains, which command it on the north-fide To the eaftward is a vaft defart. The western part is the most fruitful, and the best peopled The Worfklaw runs into the Borifthenes, about fifteen leagues lower down. From Pultowa, you pafs northward, through the defiles which communicate with the road to Moscow, a passage used by the Tartars. It is very difficult of accels, and the precautions taken by the Czar had rendered it almost unpassable; but nothing appeared impossible to Charles, and he depended upon marching to Mofcow, as foon as he had made himfelf mafter of Pultowa. With this view he laid fiege to that town in the beginning of May.

CHAP.

C H A P. XVIII.

Battle of Pultowa.

The year 1709.

T was here that Peter expected him. He had difpofed the feveral bodies of his army at convenient distances for joining each other, and marching all together against the beliegers : he had visited the countries which furround the Ukraine; namely, the duchy of Severia, watered by the Defna, already famous for his late victory; the country of Bolcho, from which the Occa takes its fource; the defarts and mountains leading to the Palus Mæotis; and last of all, he had been in the neighbourhood of Afoph, where he caufed the harbour to be cleansed, veffels to be built, and the citadel of Taganroe to be fortified. Thus had he employed the time that paffed between the battles of Lefnau and Pultowa, in preparing for the defence of his dominions. As foon as he knew hat city was befieged, he affembled all his forces : his cavalry, dragoons, infantry, Coffacks, and Calmucks, advanced from twenty different places. Nothing was wanting in his army; large cannon, field-pieces, ammunition of all forts, provisions, and even medicines for the fick : in this refpect he was greatly fuperior to his rival.

ON

ON

(101) (101)

Ps

100

NOT

lea

Gres Havi

rest

截

(itat

ick

it

创

脑

39

Hehi

ne Dei

000

us Ma

hbaen

r to b

of la

vedte

28 該

dem

gans

fron

ing in

es itt

ON

On the fifteenth day of June 1709, he appeared before Pultowa with an army of about fixty thoufand effective men. The river Worklaw was between him and Charles. The beliegers were encamped on the north-west fide of that river, the Ruffians on the fouth-east.

PETER ascends the river above the town, fixes the barges, marches over with his whole force, and draws a long line of intrenchments +, which were begun and compleated in one night in the face of the enemy. Charles might then eafily judge, whether the perfon whom he fo much despifed, and whom he thought of dethroning at Molcow, underftood the art of war. This disposition being made, Peter posted his horse between two woods, and covered it with feveral redoubts, lined with artillery. Having thus taken all neceffary precautions, he went to reconnoitre the enemy's camp in order to form the attack t

THIS battle was to decide the fate of Ruffia, Poland, and Sweden, and of two monarchs, on whom the eyes of all Europe were fixed The greateft part of those nations who were attentive to thefe important concerns, were equally ignorant of the place where these two princes were, and of their fituation ; but knowing that Charles XII. had left Saxony, at the head of a victorious army, and that he was driving his enemy every where before him, they no longer doubted that he would at length entirely crush him; and that as he had already

† June 3, 1709. 1 July 1709.

given

given laws to Denmark, Poland, and Germany, he would dictate conditions of peace in the Kremlin of Mofcow, and make a new Czar, as he had already made a new king of Poland. I have feen letters from feveral public ministers to their respective courts, confirming this general opinion.

THE rifk was far from being equal between thefe two great rivals. If Charles loft a life, which he had fo often, and foolifhly exposed, there would only have been one hero lefs in the world. The provinces of the Ukraine, the frontiers of Lithuania and Ruffia, would then be delivered from their calamities. Poland would, together with her tranquillity, recover her lawful king, who had been lately reconciled to the Czar his benefactor; and laftly, Sweden, tho' exhautted of men and money, might find motives of confolation under her heavy loffes.

But if the Czar had perished, the public would have been robbed of all those useful undertakings which he had concerted and purfued for the benefit of mankind; and Russia would have relapsed into the woful state from which she had so lately been brought.

THERE had already been fome fmall fkirmifhes between the detached parties of Swedes and Ruffians, under the walls of Pultowa. In one of these Charles had been wounded with a fhot from a carabine ‡, which had fhattered the bones of his heel. He underwent feveral painful operations, which he

‡ June 27. 1709.

bore

招日

Sile .

in

512

ant:

107

101

nit

tita

10

kgi

10

R.

富

前

Ett

101

Me

201,1

e half

are le

ir rein

00.

reen die which i

te uti

ber ter

Ator ; a

her ha

北於

2:01 2

kiraile

and for

eloft

tom 10

(加加

bore with his usual fortitude, but was confined to his bed for fome days. In this fituation he was informed, that Peter defigned to attack him. His notions of glory would not fuffer him to wait to be attacked in his entrenchments: accordingly he gave orders for drawing out his troops, and was carried himfelf in a litter. Peter the Great acknowledges, in his journal, that the Swedes attacked the redoubts that covered his cavalry, with fuch obflinate valour, that, in fpite of the ftrongest refistance from his cannon, they made the nfelves masters of two redoubts. Some writers fay, that when the Swedish infantry were in possession of the two redoubts, they thought the day their own, and began to cry out Victory. Norberg the chaplain, who was at fome great diftance from the field of battle, amongst the baggage, pretends, that this is a calumny; but whether the Swedes cried out victory or not, it is certain they were not victorious. The fire from the other redoubts was kept up without abating, and the refiftance made on every part was as firm as the attack of their affailants was vigorous. They did not make one irregular movement ; the Czar drew up his army before the entrenchments with great readinefs and order.

THE battle now became general. Peter acted as major general; Baur commanded the right wing, Menzikoff the left, and Scheremetow the center. The action lafted two hours; Charles with a piftol in his hand went from rank to rank, carried by his drabans in a litter, one of whom was killed by a cannon-ball, and at the fame time the litter was fhattered

fhattered in pieces. He then ordered his men to carry him upon pikes; for it would have been difficult in fo bloody an engagement, let Norberg fay as he pleafes, to find a fresh litter ready made. Peter received feveral shot in his cloaths and his hat; both princes were in the midfl of the fire, during the whole action. At length, after two hours desperate fighting, the Swedes gave way on all fides, and tell into confusion, fo that Charles was obliged to fly with precipitation before Peter, whom he had hitherto held in great contempt. This very hero, who was not able to mount his faddle during the battle, now fled for his life on horle back; neceffity gave him ftrength in his retreat; he fuffered the most excruciating pain, which was increased by the mortifying reflection of being vanquished, without hopes of ever again being able to look his enemy in the face. The Ruffians reckoned nine thousand two hundred and twenty four Swedes left dead on the field of battle, and between two and three thousand made prisoners in the action, which were chiefly cavalry.

CHARLES, in his flight, was attended only by fourteen thousand men, a few field-pieces, and very fmall quantity of provisions and ammunition. He directed his march fouthward, towards the Borifthenes, between the rivers Worklaw and Sol ¶, in the country of the Zaporavians. Beyond the Borifthenes are large detarts, which lead to the frontiers of lurky. Norberg affirms, that the victors

¶ Or Pfol.

durft

情日

ht M

Si D

and a

ilt.

dia

in

nd i

10

NO

物

durft not purfue Charles; yet he acknowledges, that Menzikoff appeared on the adjoining eminences, with ten thoufand horfe, and a confiderable train of artillery \dagger , while the king was paffing the Borifthenes.

men i

een 6

bergh

y mit

and

the for

ter te

Way 1

Charle

e Pete

Onterr

iount is

· Wat

n bse

n, mbi

ingu

eoty int between

the m

mil

高昌

ueto

the b

221

ie into

rithi

int

FOURTEEN thousand Swedes furrendered themfelves prisoners of war to these ten thousand Ruffians; and Lewenhaupt, who commanded them, figned the fatal capitulation, by which he gave up those Zaporavians who had engaged in the fervice of his mafter, and were then in the flying army. The chief perfons taken prifoners in the battle, and by the capitulation, were count Piper, the first minister, with two secretaries of flate, and two of the cabinet, field-marshal Renschild, the generals Lewenhaupt, Slippembac, Rozen, Stakelber, Creutz, and Hamilton, and three general aid-de-camps, the auditor general of the army, fifty-nine staff-officers, five colonels, among whom was the prince of Wirtemberg, fixteen thousand nine hundred and forty two private men and fubaltern officers; in fine, reckoning the king's domeflics, and other attendants on the army, the conqueror took no lefs than eighteen thousand feven hundred and forty fix prifoners; and, if we add nine thousand two hundred and twenty four flain in the battle, and near two thousand men that passed the Borifthenes in the king's retinue, it appears plainly, that he had no less than twenty seven thousand effective men under his command on that memorable day 1.

+ July 12 1709. + The memoirs of Peter the Great, by the pretended boyar Iwan CHARLES

CHARLES had begun his march from Saxony with forty-five thousand men; Lewenhaupt had brought upwards of fixteen thousand from Livonia, and now this once flourishing and powerful army was no more; he loft in the moraffes and on the march, the whole of his artillery, except eighteen brass cannon, two haubitzers, and twelve mortars; and with fo inconfiderable a force, he had undertaken the fiege of Pultowa, and had attacked an army provided with a formidable train of artillery. Therefore his acculation is jull, of having thewn more courage than prudence, after departing from Germany. Un the fide of the Ruffians there were only fifty two officers, and one thouland two hundred common men killed; which makes it appear that Peter made a better disposition of his troops than Charles, and that the fire of the Ruffians was infinitely fuperior to that of the Swedes.

WE find, in the memoirs of a foreign minifler to the court of Ruffia, that Peter, on hearing of Charles's defign to take refuge in Turky, wrote a friendly letter to him, defiring him not to take fo defperate a refolution, but rather to believe his facred word, and truft himfelf in his hands, than in those of the natural enemy of Chriftendom. He gave him, at the fame time, his word of honour not to detain him prifoner, but that all their differences fhould be terminated by a reafonable peace.

Nettefurancy, printed at Amtlerdam in 1739, fay, that the king of Sweden, before he pailed the Borithenes, fent a ge eral officer with propofals of peace to the Czar The four volumes of these memoirs are either a collection of uptruths and abfurdicies, or compilations from common news papers.

This

in in

mai

副

111

in

Tak

Sam

pt hz

ul ater

eight

COOTER

dimk

g liten

WO DO

s triffi

minite

罰約

0 1227

that

m, B

book

e peak

1 2020

tiosis

This letter was fent by an express as far as the river Bug, which feparates the defarts of the Ukraine from the Grand Seignior's dominions. As the meffenger did not reach that place, till Charles had entered Turky, he brought back the letter to his maller. The fame minister adds further, that he had this account from the very perfon charged with the letter ‡. This anecdote is not altogether improbable, but I do not meet with it in Peter's journals, or in any of the memorials trufted to my care. What is of greater importance with respect to this battle, was, its being the only one of a great number that have drenched the earth with blood, that inflead of producing only deftruction, has proved beneficial to mankind, fince by means of this, it gave the Czar an opportunity of civilizing fo confiderable a part of the world.

THERE have been upwards of two hundred pitched battles fought in Europe fince the beginning of this century, to the prefent year. The moft fignal, and the moft bloody victories, have produced no other confequences, than the reduction of a few provinces, y-elded afterwards by treaties, and retaken again by other battles. Armies of an hundred thoufand men have often engaged each other in the field; but the moft violent efforts have been attended only with momentary fucceffes: the moft trivial caufes have been productive of the greateft effects. There is no example in modern hiftory of any war that has compenfated by a greater good for

[‡] This fact is likewife found in a letter, printed before the anecdotes of Ruffia, p. 23.

the many evils it has occafioned ; for the happiness of the greatest empire on the earth has resulted from the battle of Pultowa. ned a

leries

ired

hat this

he m

Te

121 2

ics,

to be know

(eltres

128

T

the

the.

Q11

1

CHAP. XIX.

Confequences of the battle of Pultowa. Charles XII. takes refuge among the Turks. Augustus, whom he had dethroned. recovers his dominions. Conquests of Peter the Great.

The years 1709 and 1710.

FTER the battle and purfuit was over, the chief prifoners of rank were prefented to the conqueror, who ordered their fwords to be returned, and invited them to dine with him. It was a well known truth, that, on drinking to the officers, he faid, "To the health of my mafters in the art of war." However, most of his mafters, particularly the fubaltern officers, and all the private foldiers, were foon afterwards fent into Siberia. There was no cartel effablished for exchange of prifoners between the Ruffians and Swedes; the Czar indeed had proposed one before the finge of Pultowa, but Charles rejected the offer, and his troops were in every thing the victims of his inflexible haughtiness of temper.

IT was this unwarrantable obflinacy that occafioned

219

小花

oned all the misfortunes of Charles in Turky, and a feries of adventures more becoming a Don Quixote than a wife or prudent king; for as foon as he arrived at Bender, he was advifed to write to the Grand Vifier, as is the cuftom among the Turks; but this he thought would be demeaning himfelf too far. The like obftinacy made him fall out with all the minifters of the Porte one after another; in fhort, he knew not how to accommodate himfelf either to times or places.

THE first news of the battle of Pultowa produced a general revolution in Poland, Saxony, Sweden, and Silefia. Charles, while all powerful in those parts, had forced the emperor Joseph to take an hundred and five churches from the Catholics in favour of the Silefians of the confession of Augfburg. The Catholics there no fooner received news of the defeat of Charles, than they repossed themfelves of all the Lutheran temples. The Saxons now thought of nothing but being revenged for the extortions of a conqueror, who had robbed them, according to their own account, of twenty three millions of crowns.

THE king of Poland their elector immediately protefted against the abdication that had been extorted from him *, and being now reconciled to the Czar, he used all possible means to re-ascend the Polish throne. Sweden, overwhelmed with confernation, thought their king for a long time

> * Aug. 8. 1709. L

dead.

VOL. I.

2.8.4

rles XI

us, the

over, te

ed toth

e retary

It was

offices

n the z

partite

orilotes

wa, bil

were it ghtineli

OCCIN

dead, and in this uncertainty the fenate knew not what refolution to come to.

220

PETER in the mean time determined to make the beft use of his victory, and therefore dispatched marshal Scheremetow with an army into Livonia, on the frontiers of which province that general had so often been victorious. Prince Menzikoff was sent in halle with a numerous body of cavalry to second the few troops left in Poland, and to encourage the nobles who were in the interest of Augustus, to drive out his competitor, who was now confidered as no better than a rebel, and to disperfe a body of Swedes and troops that were still in that kingdom under the command of general Craffau.

PETER soon after fets out in person, marches through the province of Know, and the palatinates of Chelm and Upper Volhinia, and at length arrives at Lublin, where he concerts measures with the general of Lithuania. He then reviews the crown-troop, who all take the oath of allegiance to king Augustus; from thence he proceeds to Warfaw, and at Thorn enjoyed the most glorious of all triumphs *, that of receiving the thanks of a king, whom he had reftored. Here it was that he concluded a treaty against Sweden +, with the kings of Denmark, Poland, and Pruffia; in which it was refolved to recover from Charles all the conquefts of Guftavus Adolphus. Peter revived the ancient pretenfions of the Czars to Livonia, Ingria, Carelia, and part of Finland ; Denmark laid claim

* Sept. 18. 1709.

102. 7. 1709.

to

TH

lour,

hit

fier (

ny de

ictno

So

tratie

tter r

he ci

PE

fares

tra

2100

200

(th

intio

tan

tog

Mare

12

hig

10

til

it a

He

is.

prin forei

Cha

221

to Scania, and the king of Pruffia to Pomerania.

WI W

stem (

natched

niz, o

ball

F25 (21

leoral

rageth

todm

Sweets .

1 1000

marcie

gth p

Ci 111

ews th legiant

glariat

antad 國國

1 which

he con

ved the

Ingin

d dia

13

THUS had Charles XII by his unfuccefsful valour, shook the noble edifice that had been erected by the fucceisful bravery of Guftavus Adolphus. The Polish nobility came in on all fides to renew their oaths to their king, or to alk pardon for having deferted him; and almost the whole kingdom acknowledged Peter for its protector.

So unexpected a revolution, with the fubfequent treaties, made Staniflaus unable to make any further refistance, and therefore refolved on refigning the crown, if the republic required it.

PETER having concerted all the neceffary meafures with the king of Poland, and ratified the treaty with Denmark, posted away to finish his negotia ation with the king of Pruffia. It was not common for fovereign princes to perform the function of their own ambaffadors. Peter was the first who introduced this cuftom, but few have followed his example The elector of Brandenburg, the first king of Pruffia, had a conference with the Czar at Marenverder, a small town fituated in the weitern part of Pomerania, built by the old Teutonic knights, and included in the limits of Pruffia, lately made a kingdom. This country was but poor, and of a imall extent; but its new king, whenever he made a tour, displayed the utmost magnificence. He had received Czar Peter with great fplendor at his first paffing through his dominions, when that prince left his empire to improve himfelf among foreigners. But he received the conqueror of Charles XII. in a still more pompous manner. Peter

L 2

222

ter for this time concluded only a defensive treaty with him *, which afterwards, however, completed the ruin of Sweden.

PETER loft no time, and having difpatched all his negotiations in a much fhorter time than ambaffadors commonly do, joins his army then before Riga, the capital of Livonia. He began by bombarding the place, and fired off the three first bombs himfelf +; then changed the fiege into a blockade, and being well affured, that Riga could not hold out, he repaired to Petersburg, to view and forward the works carrying on there, the new buildings, and finishing of his fleet; and having laid the keel of a fhip of fifty-four guns, with his own hands, he returned to Mofcow ‡. Here he amused himtelf with affifting in the preparations for the triumphal entry, which he exhibited in that capital. He directed every thing relating to that feftival, and was himfelf the principal contriver and manager.

THE year 1710 was begun with this folemnity, fo neceffary to his fubjects, whom it infpired with notions of grandeur, and was highly delightful to every one who had been afraid of feeing the Swedes enter as conquerors, over whom they were now victorious. Seven magnificent arches were built, under which paffed the artillery, flandards, and colours of the enemy, with all the officers, generals, and ministers, who had been taken prifoners; all moved in proceffion on foot, amidit the ringing

· Oct. 20. 1709.

+ Nov. 21.

of

‡ Dec. 3.

Nbel

in hu

005 0

nice

加竹

head

At

ef t

hel

wele

(101)

1

ten

fors

the

att

tor

¢BÇ

(21)

fit

bef

C2

nif

tha

fit

e tren

mpletel

han an

in bein

by bos

not tal

formal

ings, sui

atel (

hind

the to-

hat cai

the like

irer an

lensig,

shill

Swels

ere sol

山湖

調醉

山朝

31

of bells, the found of trumpets, the difcharge of an hundred pieces of cannon, and the acclamations of an innumerable concourfe of people, whofe voices rent the air The proceffion was clofed by the victorious army, with the generals at its head on horfeback; and Peter, who marched in his rank of major general, brought up the rear. At each triumphal arch flood the deputies of the feveral orders of the flate; and at the laft was a chofen troop of young geotlemen, the fons of boyars, in Roman habits, who prefented their victorious monarch with a laurel crown.

THIS public festival was followed by another ceremony, which proved no lefs fatisfactory than the former. In the year (os happened an accolent the more difagreeable to Peter, as his arms were at that time unfuccefsful Mattheof his ambalfador to the court of London, having had his audience of leave of Queen Anne, was arrelled for debt at the fuit of some English merchants, and carried before a justice of the peace to give fecurity for the monies he owed there. The merchants infilled that the laws of commerce ought to prevail before the privileges of foreign ministers; the Czar's ambaffador, and with him all the public minifters, protefted against this proceeding, alledging, that their perfons ought to be always inviolable. The Czar wrote to Queen Anne, demanding fatiffaction for the infult offered him in the perion of his ambaffador

BUT the queen had it not in her power to ob-L 3 lige

224

lige him, becaufe, by the laws of England, tradefmen were allowed to profecute their debtors, and there was no law that exempted public ministers from fuch profecution. The murder of Patkul the Czar's ambaffador, who had been executed the year before by the orders of Charles XII. had emboldened the English to shew little regard to a character which had been fo cruelly profaned. The other public ministers then refiding at the court of London, were obliged to be bound for the Czar's ambassador; and at length, all the queen could do in his favour, was to prevail on her parliament to pafs an act, by which no one for the future could arreft an ambaffador for debt; but after the battle of Pultowa the English court. thought proper to give more public fatisfaction to the Czar.

THE queen made by a formal embaffy an excufe for what had paffed \dagger . Mr. Whitworth, the perfon charged with this commiffion, began this harangue with the following words, "Most high and mighty Emperor." He told the Czar, that the perfon who had prefumed to arrest his ambassador had been imprifoned, and rendered infamous. There was no truth in all this, but it was fufficient that he faid fo; and the title of Emperor, which the queen had not given Peter before the battle of Pultowa, plainly shewed of what consequence he was looked on in Europe.

THIS title had been already granted him in Hol-

+ Feb. 16. 1710.

land,

and.

YOTK

vile

the

¥28

and

COW

Ity

VI

Ca

011

(4)

m

naid.

5, 21

es All

顽烈

profes

bren

allth

Vai (I

DO CE

1 debi

ftion 10

) ertel

122

調

e pria

adbett

ere 113

描書

e quitti

ulting

locki

n Hil

lint,

land, not only by those who had been his fellowworkmen in the dock-yards at Saardam, and seened to interest themselves most in his glory, but likewise by the principal perfons in the state, who unanimously stilled him Emperor, and made public rejoicings for his victory, even in the presence of the Swedish minister.

THE great reputation which he had acquired by his victory of l'ultowa, was still further encreased by his manner of improving it. First, he laid fiege to Elbing, a Hanfe town of Regal Pruffia in Poland, where the Swedes had ftill a garrifon. The Ruffians mounted the walls, entered the town, and the garrifon furrendered prifoners of war +. This was one of the beft magazines belonging to Charles The conquerors found therein one hundred XII. and eighty three brafs cannon, and one hundred and fitty-feven mortars. After the reduction of Elbing ‡, Peter immediately haftened from Mofcow to Petersburg : no fooner was he arrived at this latter place than he took thipping under his new fortrefs of Cronflot, fcours the coafts of Carelia, and notwithstanding a violent florm, arrives with his fleet fately before Wyburg, the capital of Carelia in Finlande; while his land-forces advanced over the frozen moraffes, and in a fhort time the capital of Livonia is closely blockaded \$; and after a breach was made in the walls, Wyburg furrendered, and the garrifon, confifting of four thousand men, capitulated, but did not receive the honours

+ March 11. 1710.

‡ April 2.

- of

§ June 230

of war, being made prifoners notwithflanding the capitulation. Peter complained of the enemy for having made feveral infractions of this kind, and promifed to fet thefe troops at liberty, as foon as he fhould receive fatisfaction from the Swedes. On this occasion the king of Sweden was to be confulted, who continued as inflexible as ever; and those foldiers, whom he might have fet free, remained in captivity. Thus king William III. in -6+5, arrefted marshal Boufflers, notwithflanding the capitulation of Namur. There have been feveral inflances of these violations of treaties; but it is to be wished there never had been any.

AFTER the taking of this capital, the blockade of Riga was changed into a regular fiege, and puft. ed on with vigour. They were obliged to break the ice on the river Dwina, which waters the north of the city walls. An epidemical diftemper, which had raged fome time in those parts, now got among the foldiers, and carried off nine thousand; yet the fiege was not in the least abated. The garrifon at last capitulated, and were allowed the honours of war 6, but it was agreed by the capitulation, that all the Livonian officers and foldiers should inlist into the Ruffian fervice, as natives of a country that had been difmembered from that empire, and ufurped by the anceftors of Charles XII. But the Livonians were reftored to the privileges, of which his father had stript them, and all the officers entered into the

§ July 15.

Czar's

that P

his an

nut to

time :

PE

poffet

61 2

ed i

ilan

Dat

rapi

tow

Lin

few

m

日他

ny for

d, and

001 15

Weter

Was In

ble n

it has

g Wil

Duffer,

The

tions d

et tal

leckil;

eakth

ortha

whit

2DW

國當

0030

that is

min

at had

ifurpel

rominis

fain

to the

Crafs

Czar's fervice. This was the moft noble vengeance that Peter was capable of taking for the murder of his ambaffador Patkul, a Livonian, who had been put to death, for defending those privileges. The garrifon confisted of five thousand men. A fhort time afterwards, the citadal of Dunamund was taken, and the beliegers found in the city and fort above eight hundred pieces of artillery.

PETER now wanted nothing to make himfelf entirely mafter of the province of Carelia, but the poffeffion of the flrong city of Kexholm, built on an ifland in the lake of Ladoga, and deemed impregnable; it was bombarded foon after, and furrendered in a fhort time*. The ifland of Oefel in the fea, bordering upon the north of Livonia, was fubdued with the fame rapidity +.

ON the fide of Eftonia, a province of Livonia, towards the north, and on the gulph of Finland, are the towns of Pernau and Revel : by the reduction of thefe Peter compleated the conqueft of all Livonia. Pernau furrendered after a fiege of a few days ‡, and Revel capitulated without waiting to have a fingle cannon fired againft it §, but the befieged tound means to elude the conqueror, at the very time they were furrendering themfelves prifoners of war: for fome Swedifh fhips having anchored in the road, under favour of the night, the garrifon and most of the citizens embarked on board, and when the befiegers entered the town,

*Sept. 19. 1710. † Sept. 23. ‡Aug. 25. § Sept. 10.

they were furprifed to find it deferted. When Charles XII gained the victory of Narva, little did he expect that his troops would one day be driven to use fuch firatagems.

IN Poland, Staniflaus finding his army entirely ruined, took fhelter in Pomerania, which fiill belonged to Charles XII. Augustus resumed the government, and it was difficult to decide who had acquired most glory, Charles in dethroning him, or Peter in restoring him to his crown.

THE fubjects of the king of Sweden were fiill more unfortunate than that monarch himfelf. The contagicus diftemper, which had made fuch havock over Livonia, paffed from thence into Sweden; where, in the city of Stockholm, it fwept away thirty thousand perfons; it likewife defolated the provinces already almost depopulated; for during the space of ten years successively, most of the able-bodied men had quitted their country to follow their master, and perished in foreign countries.

CHARLES'S bad fortune purfued him alfo in Pomerania. His troops having come hither from Poland, to the number of eleven thousand; the Czar, the kings of Denmark and Pruffia, the elector of Hanover, and the duke of Holttein, joined together to render this army ufeles, and to oblige general Craffau, who commanded it, to submit to a neutrality. The regency of Stockholm hearing no news of their king, and dittreffed by the mortality that raged in that city, were glad to fign this neutrality, which promiled to deliver one of its provinces. teror of Tention from th part of in the moft e of this W25 th ingage Tice. while Careli CH puttie divan news him; my; Word gover invac 1725 agai rel .

tinces a

When

drives

ntireh

HI I

he go

no hel

g lin,

re fill

imiel

e fact

2 曲

m, i

kewilt

ulitit

, act

costry

oreiga

in Po

nPa

Car

tellet

enera)

D()*

g W

Dell'

pro=

229

vinces at leaft from the horrors of war. The emperor of Germany favoured this extraordinary convention, by which it was fl pulated, that the Swedifh army then in Pomerania fhould not march from thence to affift their monarch in any other part of the world; nay, it was furthermore refolved in the German empire, to raife an army to fee this moft extraordinary treaty executed. The reafon of this was, that the emperor of Germany, who was then at war with France, was in hopes to engage the Swedifh army to enter into his fervice. This whole negotiation was carried on while Peter was fubduing Livonia, Eftonia and Carelia.

CHARLES XII. who was all this time at Bender, putting every firatagem in execution to engage the divan to declare war against the Czar, received this news as one of the feverest blows that could happen him: he could not bear that the fenate of Stockholm should pretend to tie up the hands of his army; and it was on this occasion that he wrote them word, that he would fend them one of his boots to govern them.

THE Danes were now making preparations to invade Sweden; fo that every nation in Europe was engaged in war. Spain, Portugal, Italy, France, Germany, Holland, and England, were contending for the dominions left by Charles II. of Spain; and the whole north was up in arms against Charles XII. There wanted only a quarrel with the Ottoman empire, for every village in Europe

230 THE HISTORY, &c.

Europe to be exposed to the ravages of war. This quarrel happened through the jealous of the Turks soon after, when Peter had got to the top of his glory.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

Civ. # # 120 2000ct SR SR

